



Calvary Apostolic Ministries

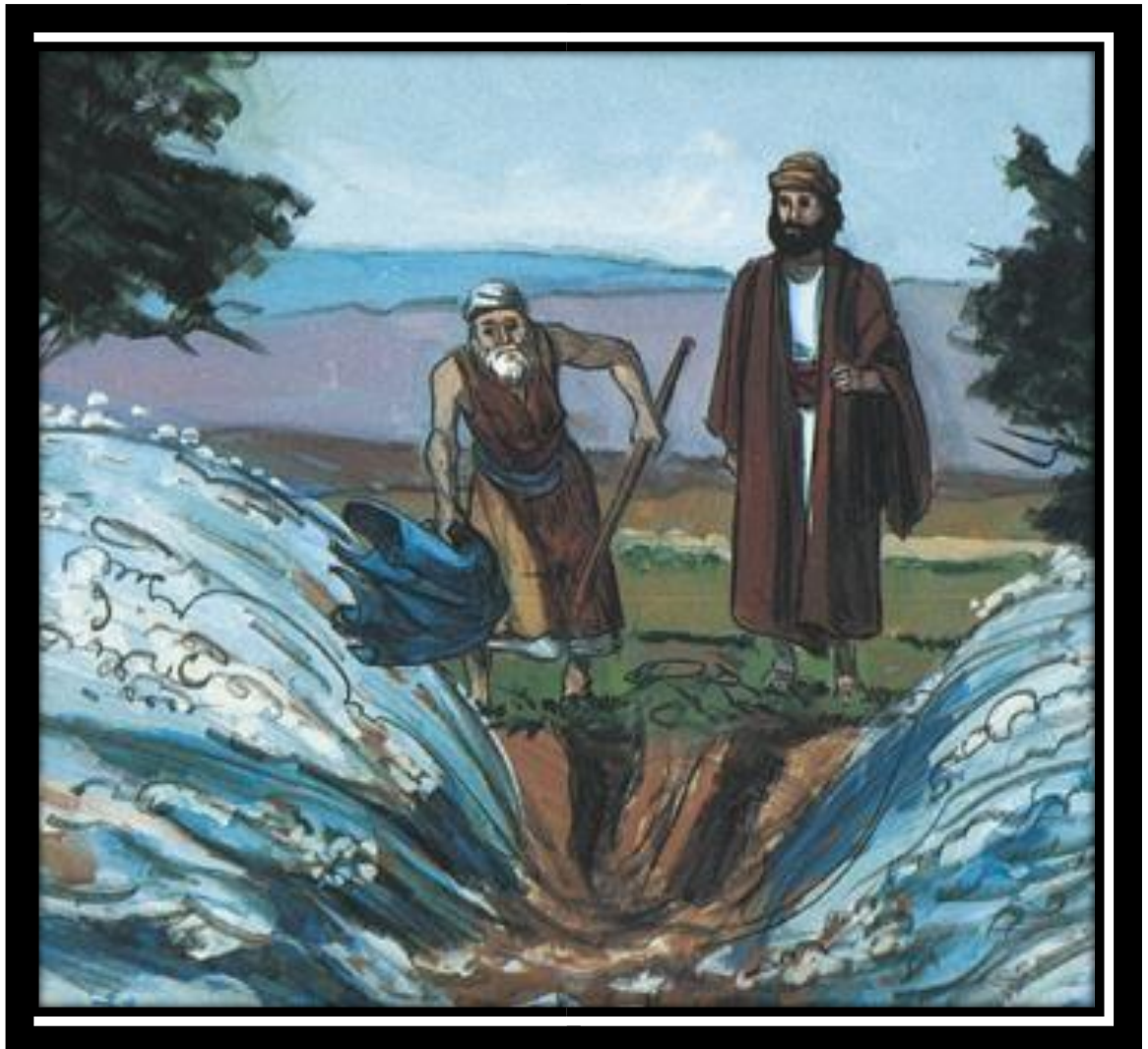
Building a legacy of spiritual truth
for present and future generations

*And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets,
Jesus Christ Himself being the chief corner stone (Ephesians 2:20)*



PRESENTS

THE URGENT NEED FOR SPIRITUAL FATHERS



JOSEPH D'ALLENDE

CONTENTS

	DEDICATION	3
	ACKNOWLEDGMENTS	4
	FORWARD	5
	PREFACE	6
CHAPTER 1	RIGHTLY DIVIDING THE WORD OF TRUTH	7
CHAPTER 2	THE ULTIMATE LEGACY	12
CHAPTER 3	THE POWER OF REPRODUCTION	23
CHAPTER 4	SANCTIFICATION OVERCOMING BAD HABITS	34
CHAPTER 5	SANCTIFICATION	43
CHAPTER 6	SANCTIFICATION (CONTINUED)	47
CHAPTER 7	SANCTIFICATION (CONTINUED)	53
CHAPTER 8	SPIRITUAL ARMAMENT	58
CHAPTER 9	SPIRITUAL ARMAMENT	70
CHAPTER 10	WEAPONS OF OFFENSE	92
CHAPTER 11	WEAPONS OF OFFENSE	100
CHAPTER 12	THE CONFIDANT	115
CHAPTER 13	CHOOSING THE SPIRITUAL SONS	122
CHAPTER 14	THE SPIRITUAL FATHER	128
CHAPTER 15	DISTINCTIONS AMONG THE SPIRITUAL SONS	135
CHAPTER 16	GOD'S CHOICE	140
CHAPTER 17	THE LAW OF ASSOCIATION	144
CHAPTER 18	THE THREE PRINCIPLES FOR SUCCESSFUL SPIRITUAL PARENTING	157
CHAPTER 19	THE IMPORTANT ROLE OF BIBLE COLLEGES AND BIBLE SCHOOLS	195
CHAPTER 20	APPRENTICESHIPS	216

**DEDICATED
TO
SENILE SOEKNUNDAN
PASTOR OF CALVARY MINISTRIES
CHATSWORTH DURBAN, SOUTH AFRICA**

**ABSENT FROM THE BODY PRESENT
WITH THE LORD**



**2 Corinthians 8:7 (ESV)
But you excelled in everything – in faith, in speech,
in knowledge, in all earnestness, and in our love**

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

First and foremost, I thank God, my heavenly Father, for adopting me into His family, Jesus Christ for laying down His life as a sacrifice that I may have eternal life, and The Holy Spirit, my teacher, and guide,
To my dear wife Dolores, my three daughters Yolanda, Evelyn, and Michelle, my son in The Lord Pastor Jacob Isaac, Pastors Glenn Horner, Robert and Ellen Frank, Keith Walsh, the Grace Zone Fellowship, and Ian Sinclair for their continual encouragement.

FOREWORD

I have worked for and with Dr. Joseph D'Allende since September 2011. He has a Father's heart and is caring, gracious, and extremely kind. He writes from a wealth of experience:

Itinerant local and international preacher

Bible College teacher

Vice Principal of Bible College

Principal of Bible College

Church Planter

He has trained countless men and women for the ministry and writes from a reservoir of experience.

It has been a blessing working for and with Dr. Joseph D'Allende. I commend this book, which will be a great blessing to you. Applying the profound teachings of this book will help you leave a legacy of spiritual sons.

Ian Sinclair

Assistant to Dr. Joseph D'Allende

PREFACE

Over the years, many books have been published on Mentoring. However, not much on Spiritual Fatherhood. Being an Ascended Gifted Minister of the Gospel, I felt compelled to write on the urgent need for Spiritual Fathers. Spiritual Fatherhood and spiritual Sons Ministries likened unto Moses, Joshua, Elijah, Elisha, Apostle Paul, Timothy, and Titus. I have always been convinced that the ultimate evidence of genuine Anointed Ministry is the power of reproducing one's ministry in the life of others. Moses gives an excellent example of taking his anointing and transferring it to Joshua. The Ascended Gifted Ministries of our day are called to do likewise. Elisha received a double portion of the anointing which rested upon Elijah. Apostle Paul raised Timothy and Titus and, no doubt, countless more to continue where he had left off. A productive and blessed ministry reproduces after its kind, and therefore, this book deals with the following:

THE PROBLEM WITHIN CHURCH CIRCLES OF "CALLING NO MAN FATHER.

THE ASCENDED GIFT'S LEGACY.

THE THREEFOLD CORD OF NATURAL AND SPIRITUAL FATHERHOOD.

THE SPIRITUAL SON OVERCOMING BAD HABITS

THE POWER OF CONFESSION AND FORGIVENESS.

SANCTIFICATION PRINCIPLES.

SPIRITUAL ARMAMENT.

THE POWER OF PRAYER.

CHOOSING THE SPIRITUAL SONS.

THE SPIRITUAL FATHER.

THE LAW OF ASSOCIATION.

THE ROLE OF BIBLE COLLEGES.

THE THREE C'S OF SOUND PREACHING

The Love of God, our heavenly Father, the Grace of our Saviour Jesus Christ, and the Power of The Holy Spirit enrich your understanding and application of this book. So may you have many sons in the Faith.

CHAPTER 1
RIGHTLY DIVIDING THE WORD OF TRUTH

MATHEW 23: 1-12

THEN JESUS SAID TO THE CROWDS AND HIS DISCIPLES, ²“THE SCRIBES AND THE PHARISEES SIT ON MOSES’ SEAT, ³ SO DO AND OBSERVE WHATEVER THEY TELL YOU, BUT NOT THE WORKS THEY DO. FOR THEY PREACH BUT DO NOT PRACTICE. ⁴THEY TIE UP HEAVY BURDENS, HARD TO BEAR, AND LAY THEM ON PEOPLE’S SHOULDERS, BUT THEY ARE NOT WILLING TO MOVE THEM WITH THEIR FINGER. ⁵ THEY DO ALL THEIR DEEDS TO BE SEEN BY OTHERS. FOR THEY MAKE THEIR PHYLACTERIES BROAD AND THEIR FRINGES LONG, ⁶ AND THEY LOVE THE PLACE OF HONOR AT FEASTS AND THE BEST SEATS IN THE SYNAGOGUES ⁷ AND GREETINGS IN THE MARKETPLACES AND BEING CALLED RABBI BY OTHERS. ⁸ BUT YOU ARE NOT TO BE CALLED RABBI, FOR YOU HAVE ONE TEACHER, AND YOU ARE ALL BROTHERS. ⁹ AND CALL NO MAN YOUR FATHER ON EARTH, FOR YOU HAVE ONE FATHER, WHO IS IN HEAVEN. ¹⁰ NEITHER BE CALLED INSTRUCTORS, FOR YOU HAVE ONE INSTRUCTOR, THE CHRIST. ¹¹ THE GREATEST AMONG YOU SHALL BE YOUR SERVANT. ¹² WHOEVER EXALTS HIMSELF IS HUMBLED, AND WHOEVER HUMBLER HIMSELF IS EXALTED.

Undoubtedly the above text has been misinterpreted and thus has caused confusion and friction among the members of the Body of Christ. One of the main reasons for this untoward conflict is the failure to employ the Context Principle of the Biblical Science of Interpretation, namely Hermeneutics. Scripture, when taken out of context, leads to misinterpretation. Furthermore, we must allow Scripture to interpret Scripture. God’s Word confirms God’s Word.

Spiritual and natural Fatherhood appears throughout The Bible. No doubt this causes concern, and that being; are the words of Jesus (call no man Father) canceling the teaching of Natural and Spiritual Fatherhood. Be it that Jesus had withdrawn all the references of Natural and Spiritual Fatherhood, then surely Jesus was contradicting Himself for the fact and truth JESUS IS THE WORD OF GOD:

1 JOHN 1:1-2: IN THE BEGINNING WAS THE WORD, AND THE WORD WAS WITH GOD, AND THE WORD WAS GOD. ² HE WAS IN THE BEGINNING WITH GOD. ³ ALL THINGS WERE MADE THROUGH HIM, AND WITHOUT HIM WAS NOT ANYTHING MADE THAT WAS MADE.

1 JOHN 1:14: AND THE WORD BECAME FLESH AND DWELT AMONG US, AND WE HAVE SEEN HIS GLORY, GLORY AS OF THE ONLY SON FROM THE FATHER, FULL OF GRACE AND TRUTH.

Jesus (The Word of God, made flesh) in no way discredited the teachings of the essential (vital) ministry of natural and Spiritual Fatherhood. There are Natural and Spiritual Fatherhood records throughout the Canon of Holy Scripture.

Jesus was rebuking the Scribes and Pharisees who loved the attention and honor paid to them by the people. They were proud religious leaders who wore special garments for recognition. They loved the seats of honor given to them at special functions. They were proud and demanded the respect of the people. These religious leaders preached The Word of God but did not practice it. They lived a lie. Jesus' words were an open rebuke to the Scribes and Pharisees. And yet Jesus encouraged the crowd to practice what the Scribes and Pharisees preached, but not to be like them because they were hypocrites. Taking what Jesus said, the Scribes and Pharisees were the type of religious leaders that were not to be followed. They were the type anyone should not emulate, for they did not honor what they taught. Our modern phrase best describes the Scribes and Pharisees in the idiom (phrase): DO WHAT I TELL YOU BUT DON'T DO WHAT I DO. Strange but true, the peacock attitude (pride) of the Scribes and Pharisees continues in our day and age among our spiritual leaders.

EXAMPLES OF FATHERHOOD IN THE OLD TESTAMENT

The three Patriarchs (Fathers) of the Jewish Nation are Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob:

EXODUS 3:6: AND HE SAID, "I AM THE GOD OF YOUR FATHER, THE GOD OF ABRAHAM, THE GOD OF ISAAC, AND THE GOD OF JACOB." AND MOSES HID HIS FACE, FOR HE WAS AFRAID TO LOOK AT GOD.

The three Patriarchs were the Natural and Spiritual Fathers of the Jewish nation. The English Standard Version Bible records 1325 references to Fathers in the Old Testament and 387 references to Fathers in The New Testament. A total of 1622.

Among the 1325 references to the Fathers of The Old Testament are great Spiritual Fathers, the Prophets, and certain Priests and Kings. Men like Moses and Elijah. Elisha, Samuel, Ezra, Nehemiah, Isaiah, and many more were Spiritual Fathers to the nation of Israel.

EXAMPLES OF FATHERHOOD IN THE NEW TESTAMENT

Paul, the prolific Apostle, referred to Timothy, Titus, and Onesimus as his children and son:

1 TIMOTHY 1:2: TO TIMOTHY, MY TRUE CHILD IN THE FAITH: GRACE, MERCY, AND PEACE FROM GOD THE FATHER AND CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD.

1 TIMOTHY 1:18: THIS CHARGE I ENTRUST TO YOU, TIMOTHY, MY CHILD, IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE PROPHECIES PREVIOUSLY MADE ABOUT YOU, THAT BY THEM YOU MAY WAGE THE GOOD WARFARE,

TITUS 1:4: TO TITUS, MY TRUE CHILD IN A COMMON FAITH: GRACE AND PEACE FROM GOD THE FATHER AND CHRIST JESUS OUR SAVIOR.

PHILEMON 1:10: I APPEAL TO YOU FOR MY SON ONESIMUS, WHOM I HAVE BEGOTTEN WHILE IN MY CHAINS,

Apostle Paul authenticates his Spiritual Fatherhood in the above four Scripture verses by referring to these three men as MY CHILD, MY TRUE CHILD, and MY SON. THE WORD MY IS A POSSESSIVE PRONOUN. Using the possessive pronoun MY, Apostle Paul confirms his role as the Spiritual Father of the three men of God.

CALL NO MAN RABBI

Jesus also said no man was to be called Rabbi, which means Teacher or Instructor in English. Over the years, CALL NO MAN FATHER has been noted, and extraordinarily little of CALL NO MAN TEACHER. However, considering Ephesians 4:7-13, we note that a teacher is one of the Fivefold Ascended Gifts:

BUT GRACE WAS GIVEN TO EACH ONE OF US ACCORDING TO THE MEASURE OF CHRIST'S GIFT. ⁸ THEREFORE, IT SAYS, "WHEN HE ASCENDED ON HIGH HE LED A HOST OF CAPTIVES, AND HE GAVE GIFTS TO MEN." ⁹ (IN SAYING, "HE ASCENDED," WHAT DOES IT MEAN BUT THAT HE HAD ALSO DESCENDED INTO THE LOWER REGIONS, THE EARTH? ¹⁰ WHO DESCENDED IS THE ONE ALSO ASCENDED FAR ABOVE ALL THE HEAVENS, THAT HE MIGHT FILL ALL THINGS.) ¹¹ HE GAVE THE APOSTLES, THE PROPHETS, THE EVANGELISTS, THE SHEPHERDS, AND TEACHERS, ¹² TO EQUIP THE SAINTS FOR THE WORK OF MINISTRY, FOR BUILDING UP THE BODY OF CHRIST, ¹³ UNTIL WE ALL ATTAIN TO THE UNITY OF THE FAITH AND THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE SON OF GOD, TO MATURE MANHOOD, TO THE MEASURE OF THE STATURE OF THE FULLNESS OF CHRIST.

Many Christians debate whether we should call leaders in The Body of Christ Fathers, but no one has a problem addressing educators as Teachers. No doubt, factual inconsistency (discrepancy). I wonder why? Are we making meat of one and fish of the other? It would seem so. Is it far easier to criticize those who are called Fathers than those who are called Teachers?

Jesus made no discrepancy between Fathers and Teachers. Once again, was Jesus contradicting The Word? Most definitely not. Nicodemus addressed Jesus as Rabbi and Teacher sent by God. Jesus accepted the honor of being addressed as Rabbi and Teacher, for He was The Teacher of all Teachers. Jesus spoke of Teachers who had the same attitude toward pomp (display and ceremony) and grandeur as those who loved being called Fathers. Jesus, in gifting the Body of Christ with the Fivefold Ministry of Ephesians, mentions Teachers as one of the Fivefold:

EPHESIANS 4: 7-11:GRACE WAS GIVEN TO EACH ONE OF US ACCORDING TO THE MEASURE OF CHRIST'S GIFT. ⁸ THEREFORE, IT SAYS, "WHEN HE ASCENDED ON HIGH HE LED A HOST OF CAPTIVES, AND HE GAVE GIFTS TO MEN." ⁹ (IN SAYING, "HE ASCENDED," WHAT DOES IT MEAN BUT THAT HE HAD ALSO DESCENDED INTO THE LOWER REGIONS, THE EARTH? ¹⁰ WHO DESCENDED IS THE ONE ALSO ASCENDED FAR ABOVE ALL THE HEAVENS THAT HE MIGHT FILL ALL THINGS.) ¹¹. HE GAVE THE APOSTLES, THE PROPHETS, THE EVANGELISTS,

CHAPTER 2
THE ULTIMATE LEGACY

1 CORINTHIANS 4:15

THOUGH YOU HAVE COUNTLESS GUIDES IN CHRIST, YOU DO NOT HAVE MANY FATHERS. FOR I BECAME YOUR FATHER IN CHRIST JESUS THROUGH THE GOSPEL.

Many modern-day Ascended Gifted Ministers excel in their ministries. They are eloquent (persuasive, fluent) orators. They never fail for want of words and usually have a massive following. The sad thing about many of these articulate Ministers is that their ministries die with them when they die. Many modern outstanding, gifted Ministers do not understand that their best legacy left to The Church is not so much their audios, videos, and books, though these are priceless. The most incredible Gift they can bequeath to The Body of Christ is their Spiritual Sons, whom they have nurtured (fostered) and raised for the ministry. Our God-ordained ministries are not for now only. It is for the future as well. Therefore, Ministers must Spiritually Father young men (as a safeguard, it is best for women to spiritually mother the young ladies for the ministry).

These fluent (confident) orators are often sought after to speak at large seminars and conferences, and therefore they emphasize study and research, preparation, and oratory. Their intense study, hours of preparation, and highfaluting (grandiose) oratory is in no way wrong. However, there is another aspect of ministry requiring just as much attention and even more. Therefore, the Word of God encourages The Leadership of The Body of Christ not only to concentrate on preaching and instruction but also on the raising of Spiritual Sons and daughters for the ministry:

1 CORINTHIANS 4:14-17: I DO NOT WRITE THESE THINGS TO MAKE YOU ASHAMED BUT TO ADMONISH YOU AS MY BELOVED CHILDREN. ¹⁵ FOR THOUGH YOU HAVE COUNTLESS GUIDES IN CHRIST, YOU DO NOT HAVE MANY FATHERS. FOR I BECAME YOUR FATHER IN CHRIST JESUS THROUGH THE GOSPEL. ¹⁶ I URGE YOU, THEN, BE IMITATORS OF ME. ¹⁷ THAT IS WHY I SENT^[B] YOU TIMOTHY, MY BELOVED AND FAITHFUL CHILD IN THE LORD, TO REMIND YOU OF MY WAYS IN CHRIST,^[I] AS I TEACH THEM EVERYWHERE IN EVERY CHURCH.

The most prolific (productive, fruitful) Apostle, Paul, sets a unique (exceptional) example for our modern-day Ascended Gifted Ministers. To this very day, theologians debate whether Apostle Paul was married. Be it that he was married, he would have had children. If Paul were not married, then being a Godly man, Paul would not have Fathered any children. However, when we read his Epistles, he speaks of only three Spiritual Sons, not natural ones.

1 TIMOTHY 1:2: TO TIMOTHY, MY TRUE CHILD IN THE FAITH: GRACE, MERCY, AND PEACE FROM GOD THE FATHER AND CHRIST JESUS OUR LORD.

1 TIMOTHY 1:18: THIS CHARGE I ENTRUST TO YOU, TIMOTHY, MY CHILD, IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE PROPHECIES PREVIOUSLY MADE ABOUT YOU, THAT BY THEM YOU MAY WAGE THE GOOD WARFARE,

TITUS 1:4: TO TITUS, MY TRUE CHILD IN A COMMON FAITH: GRACE AND PEACE FROM GOD THE FATHER AND CHRIST JESUS OUR SAVIOR.

PHILEMON 1:10 ESV: I APPEAL TO YOU FOR MY SON ONESIMUS, WHOM I HAVE BEGOTTEN WHILE IN MY CHAINS,

Apostle Paul chooses his words wisely to give The Modern-Day Church an unforgettable lesson on the importance of raising Spiritual Sons for the ministry:

TIMOTHY, A TRUE SON OF THE FAITH

MY SON TIMOTHY

TITUS, A TRUE SON OF THE FAITH

MY SON ONESIMUS

Spiritual Fathers raise effective (capable) Spiritual Sons. Moses raised Joshua, Elijah raised Elisha, Jesus raised eleven competent Apostles, and Paul raised Timothy and Titus. In many a way, Joshua echoed the voice and teachings of Moses. Elisha had a double portion of Elijah's miraculous power. The Apostles echoed the words and teachings of Jesus and performed wondrous miracles. Timothy had the heart of Paul, who loved the unlovable and discarded. Titus expressed Apostolic Ministry likened to Paul's Apostolic Ministry of Governance (see Titus 1:5).

In my early years of ministry, I purposed to be a great orator who would excel in expressing The Gospel of Jesus Christ. I envisioned myself ministering throughout the world, becoming a sought-after public speaker. As the years went by, I understood that being a sought-after orator was not the will of God for my life and ministry, though I had ministered in several countries by that time. By God's Grace, though, I was blessed as an itinerant (traveling) preacher. However, I still felt it was not all God had called me for. In my prayer and worship devotions with God, I sought God's direction, and I must admit God did not speak to me; however, as I spent time with young men of God whom I constantly encouraged to seek God's anointing for the ministry as the young men began to develop into a Christlike nature and preach authoritatively. I discovered that my ultimate ministry was that of a Spiritual Father. Like Moses, Elijah, and Paul, I was to invest (instill) my ministry into these young men. By God's Grace and the anointing of The Holy Spirit, I realized I was to take some of my anointing and impart it to the young men that God had appointed me to train. I was to follow Moses, Elijah, and Paul's examples of securing a legacy of ministry for future generations:

Though I saw what God was doing through me with these young men, I was hesitant. I wanted to continue as an itinerant preacher. In this time of uncertainty, God worked in His peculiar way; Trials, tribulations, and failures plagued my ministry. I soon yielded to God's purpose for my life and ministry. I was to reproduce my Ascended Gift in others. Through His divine call and enablement, God wanted me to multiply my ministry and not my popularity and to do this. I had to seek out my Spiritual Sons and train and equip them for the ministry. At first, I wrestled with this illumination from God. I wanted to be a famous preacher, and be it that I had to invest in other saints of God's ministries; I felt that I would never be that great orator of The Gospel who would

travel the world preaching The Gospel of Jesus Christ. As I continued developing my ministry, the work of God at times became insipid (dull, colorless). Through this insipidness, I soon discovered why I no longer enjoyed the ministry. I was selfish. Three people were prominent in my life: ME, MYSELF, and I. I cried to The Lord to restore the joy I once had in preaching His Word. God wonderfully answered my heart's cry, and by His extraordinary Grace, I began to see others as more significant than myself. Once again, I enjoyed preaching God's Word. Furthermore, as I invested my ministry into the new converts, I saw the development of their spiritual life and the first stages of their ministry. Through the abiding presence of The Holy Spirit, God's Word began unveiling the precious truth of The Word of how I could be THE LEADER God had called me to be. I knew deep within my inner man that God had called me to be an Ascended Gifted Father.

EPHESIANS 4:11-12: AND HE GAVE THE APOSTLES, THE PROPHETS, THE EVANGELISTS, THE SHEPHERDS, AND TEACHERS, ¹²TO EQUIP THE SAINTS FOR THE WORK OF MINISTRY, FOR BUILDING UP THE BODY OF CHRIST,

In the early years of my ministry, I could not understand how Preaching and Leadership dovetailed. I always wanted to be a Preacher, yet God had called me an Ascended, Gifted Spiritual Father. As I submitted to The Lord, God wonderfully opened The Word of God to me. I began to study the great Leaders and Preachers of The Bible. To my amazement, I saw how God held nothing back concerning these great men of God. Their strengths and weaknesses were an open book to me. I soon realized why God purposely had done this. It was for the benefit of myself, and the Spiritual Sons God would place under my care to develop their ministries. I was to emulate the strength and discard the weaknesses of God's Bible characters. I could not impart my weaknesses and the weakness of God's Bible characters to those under my care.

God supernaturally opened a door of ministry, which propelled my Leadership qualities. I taught at a renowned Bible College in Durban, South Africa, for three and a half years. While ministering there, I saw the effect I had on developing the ministries of others.

I soon discovered the difference between preaching and Leadership. Preachers have an audience for a time and a moment. However, Ascended Gifted Leaders leave a legacy as their Spiritual Sons. An

audience is here today but gone tomorrow. A leader has a following. He goes, and his Spiritual Sons follow, and many who follow often move on and are released into their respective ministries. This writing aims to influence God's Anointed Ascended Gifted Ministries to see and understand their role as Spiritual Fathers and Leaders. We must realize we are not just building The Church of our day; we are building The Church of Tomorrow as well, and by the Grace of God, we must make concerted (concentrated) efforts to train The Future Leaders for The Church of today and tomorrow.

Several years ago, God gave me an acronym for Father, which has become meaningful to my role as a natural and Spiritual Father.

FATHERS

ALWAYS

TEACH

HEAVEN'S

ETERNAL

RIGHTEOUSNESS

The Church of today and tomorrow need this type of Spiritual Father who delights in The Righteousness of God and the future of their Spiritual Sons. The destiny of The Body of Christ is excellent as today's Ascended Gifted Ministers realize the influence of the Body of Christ lies with their Spiritual Sons. However, God has called them Instructors, and God has also called them Spiritual Fathers of The Faith, who, by the Grace and power of God, raise Spiritual Sons to continue with God's Work:

1 CORINTHIANS 4:15: THOUGH YOU HAVE COUNTLESS GUIDES IN CHRIST, YOU DO NOT HAVE MANY FATHERS. FOR I BECAME YOUR FATHER IN CHRIST JESUS THROUGH THE GOSPEL.

NOTA BENE (note well)

Apostle Paul makes a clear-cut distinction between spiritual Instructors and Spiritual Fathers:

1 CORINTHIANS 4:14-17: I DO NOT WRITE THESE THINGS TO MAKE YOU ASHAMED, BUT TO ADMONISH YOU AS MY BELOVED CHILDREN. ¹⁵ FOR

THOUGH YOU HAVE COUNTLESS GUIDES IN CHRIST, YOU DO NOT HAVE MANY FATHERS. FOR I BECAME YOUR FATHER IN CHRIST JESUS THROUGH THE GOSPEL. ¹⁶ I URGE YOU, THEN, BE IMITATORS OF ME. ¹⁷ THAT IS WHY I SENT YOU TIMOTHY, MY BELOVED AND FAITHFUL CHILD IN THE LORD, TO REMIND YOU OF MY WAYS IN CHRIST, ¹⁸ AS I TEACH THEM EVERYWHERE IN EVERY CHURCH.

DISTINCTIONS BETWEEN TEACHERS AND FATHERS

1

PRACTICAL ON-HAND TEACHING SURPASSES VERBAL INSTRUCTION.

Instructors impart knowledge theoretically. They impart knowledge without practicality. It is up to the student to understand the imparted ability and how he, the student, applies it to his life and ministry. The instructor does not engage in the practical development of his student's ministry. The instructor's association with the student is like an Architect or Draughtsman giving a building plan to a person who is not a builder. The drawing plan has the necessary information about the building's dimensions and specific materials and specifications for construction. However, the Architect nor the Draughtsman aid the student in erecting the building. An instructor loses contact with his students. I have had outstanding Instructors, and I must admit that the knowledge they imparted was priceless. However, being what they are as Instructors, their ministries demand that they teach, teach, teach. And sad but true, most instructors can tell you what to do, but can they show you how to do it?

Spiritual Fathers have gained much knowledge over the busy years of study and practicality, applying their knowledge gained through research and the usefulness of using the knowledge gained through study. Spiritual Fathers are not like Architects or Draftsmen, for they can design a theoretical (academic) plan and implement it. The significant difference between an instructor (teacher) and a Spiritual Father is that the Teacher only tells you what to do. In contrast, a Spiritual Father can tell you what to do and show you how to do it. Therefore, a Spiritual Father's ministry is twofold: HE INSTRUCTS AND CONSTRUCTS.

2

PERSONAL AND SPIRITUAL EXPERIENCES

Instructors, in most cases, teach from prescribed (set) books, while Spiritual Fathers teach from life's natural and spiritual experiences.

3

WORD OF MOUTH AS OPPOSED TO HANDS OF ACTION.

Instructors excel in knowledge gained from study and intense reading, while Spiritual Fathers excel because of on-hand experiences. Instructors impart intellectual knowledge, while Spiritual Fathers impart it through trial and error from lives and on-hand experiences. The instructor verbally advises how to express ministry while Spiritual Fathers demonstrate. Instructors train students by the letter, while Spiritual Fathers train by showing how ministry is executed and carried out.

4

SPIRITUAL FATHERS SEE THE RESULT OF SPIRITUAL ON-HAND TRAINING.

Instructors usually do not see the practical achievements of what they have intellectually imparted to their students. At the same time, Spiritual Fathers have practically trained their Spiritual Sons and worked alongside them. Considering the rise of Timothy and Titus, Apostle Paul gave the two young on-hand training. Apostle Paul had such confidence in Timothy and Titus that he sent them on unique ministry assignments.

Titus 1:5: I left you in **Crete** so that you might put what remained into order and **appoint Elders in every town as I directed you.**

The charge (responsibility) Apostle Paul gave to Titus was no ordinary charge. This is clear as we do a Word Study on the Word Elders:

ACTS 4:14: DO NOT NEGLECT THE GIFT YOU HAVE, WHICH WAS GIVEN YOU BY PROPHECY WHEN THE COUNCIL OF **ELDERS** LAID THEIR HANDS ON YOU.

ACTS 15: 6: THE APOSTLES AND THE ELDERS GATHERED TOGETHER TO CONSIDER THIS MATTER.

1 PETER 5:1: 'SO I EXHORT THE **ELDERS** AMONG YOU, AS A FELLOW ELDER AND A WITNESS OF THE SUFFERINGS OF CHRIST, AS WELL AS A PARTAKER IN THE GLORY THAT IS GOING TO BE REVEALED: SHEPHERD THE FLOCK OF GOD THAT IS AMONG YOU, EXERCISING OVERSIGHT, NOT UNDER COMPULSION, BUT WILLINGLY, AS GOD

WOULD HAVE YOU, NOT FOR SHAMEFUL GAIN, BUT EAGERLY; NOT DOMINEERING OVER THOSE IN YOUR CHARGE BUT BEING EXAMPLES TO THE FLOCK.

ACTS:20:28: ²⁸TAKE HEED THEREFORE UNTO YOURSELVES, AND TO ALL THE FLOCK, OVER THE WHICH THE HOLY GHOST HATH MADE YOU OVERSEERS, TO FEED THE CHURCH OF GOD, WHICH HE HATH PURCHASED WITH HIS OWN BLOOD.

Using the Linguistic Hermeneutical Principle, which governs scriptural interpretation, the Greek Strongs Concordance gives a correct picture of the ministry of an Elder:

G4166
Poy-mane
Of uncertain affinity
A shepherd (literally or figuratively):-
Shepherd, pastor

Apostle Paul had confidence in his Spiritual Sons' ministerial growth to the extent that he sent them on specific ministry assignments. For example, Titus was sent to Crete to set Churches in order by ordaining Elders. Paul encouraged Timothy not to consider his age but rather, as a good soldier, to do the Lord's work and Evangelize.

5

AFTER THEIR KIND

Instructors usually only produce after their kind, while Apostle Paul had a THREEFOLD CORD OF MINISTRY. He was a HERALD (Evangelist), an APOSTLE, and a TEACHER. Therefore, he produced varied ministries (Titus had an Apostolic anointing to set Local churches in order. Timothy had a pastoral ministry, yet Paul encouraged him to do the work of an Evangelist.

6

SPIRITUAL SONS OUTGROW THEIR SPIRITUAL FATHERS

Students do not usually outgrow their instructors; if they do, it is usually only in the academic arena. In contrast, Spiritual Fathers reproduce Spiritual Sons who outgrow their Father's practical ministry. Elijah and Elisha are classic examples of this truth. The Old Testament records

Elijah performed sixteen miracles and Elisha 32 miracles. Usually, Spiritual Sons outgrow their Spiritual Fathers.

7

THE THREEFOLD CORD OF EFFECTIVE FATHERHOOD

I believe that all Ascended Gifts are ordained and appointed by Jesus as Spiritual Fathers. The similarity between all the Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, and Teachers is their Fatherhood ministry. Therefore, I believe Fathering is one of the significant hallmarks (seal, trademark) of Ascended Gifted Ministries. I believe that Spiritual Fathers have a Threefold Parenting Cord of Ministry, which seals their ministries as Spiritual Fathers. I call The Three-Fold Cord of Fatherhood the 3P's of Parenting:

PROTECTION

PROVISION

PROMOTION

CORD 1: PROTECTION

The Body of Christ is living in a depraved (evil) world; therefore, we must admit that the influence of this sinful world has a marked effect on BornAgain Spirit-Filled Christians. The Roman Catholic Church teaches that the most influential years of a child are from birth to seven. And that is why Roman Catholics indoctrinate their young children in their Roman Catholic Catechism. They exclaim that children trained in the Catechism will remain Catholics till they die. I was a Catholic and attended Roman Catholic Schools. However, my Catholic parents were not Church goers; therefore, I only had my Catholic Catechism induction at six when I began school. Yet the influence of The Catholic Dogmas (doctrines) strongly affected me; therefore, I wrestled with my acceptance of Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour. As a result, I believed more in the Catholic Church than in Jesus. Just as the above influence affected my understanding of Christ and the Roman Catholic Church, in the same way, the early years of a new convert's conversion either make or break them in their relationship with The Lord. Doctrine and the Vision of The Local Church and Denomination come later as they mature. Too often, Local Churches and Denominations concentrate on indoctrinating the new converts in Doctrine and the Vision of the Local Church and The Denomination. Another major problem is that new

converts are encouraged to attend The Weekly Bible Study. The problem with the weekly designed Bible Studies is for the Local Congregation, who are regular Church Members. Bible Studies of Practical Christian Living and Christ-Centered Character should be for the new converts for 12 to 16 weeks. Once again, we must remind ourselves that character precedes Knowledge and Ministry. After that, they should attend the weekly Bible Study designed for all members of The Church.

A common mistake in our Modern Churches is holding special classes for new converts to discover their specific roles in their newfound Church. New converts are plagued with bad worldly habits and need deliverance. Spiritual Fathers must know that Godly Christian Character precedes Christian ministry, so teachings developing Christian character are essential.

CORD 2: PROVISION

Natural Spiritual Fathers work to feed, clothe, and educate their children. By the Grace of our Lord Jesus and the power of The Holy Spirit, they set a Christlike example for their children to emulate. Spiritual Fathers provide The Bread of Life, the very Word of God, not only by Word of mouth but also with action. Spiritual Fathers are Living Epistles to their Spiritual Sons. They teach their Spiritual Sons the Word and live The Word as a living example. Spiritual Fathers are living visual aids.

CORD 3: PROMOTION

Another important aspect of parenting is the influence of our community. There are good and sad to say bad people in all societies, and that's why parents must be careful about whom their children befriend. My dear wife (Dolores) was strong in the company and friends of our children, and therefore she had the neighborhood children play with our three daughters at our home. In this way, she could watch them. My wife went as far as playing the games of snakes and ladders with the children, hide and seek, draughts, and many more. Often, she would tell the children a Bible story, as most of the daughter's little friends did not attend Church Services. My daughters were only allowed to watch children's TV programs. My wife has done incredible work on the girls, and I am proud to say that while they lived at our home, we never heard them swear or say a bad word.

Good natural Spiritual Fathers raise their Spiritual Sons and daughters to help their fellow man. However, there comes that time when the biological Father must release his Spiritual Sons and daughters into their future to start their own families. Therefore, the Spiritual Father releases his Spiritual Sons and daughters into their respective ministries with his blessing and trust.

SUMMARY

- Their Spiritual Sons are the best legacy Ascended Gifts can bequeath to The Body of Christ.
- Spiritual Fathers are more beneficial to The Body of Christ than instructors are.
- Preaching and Leadership are linked.
- Preachers may captivate an audience. However, leaders always have a following.
- God withholds nothing from us concerning His Bible characters. On the contrary, the Lord reveals their good and evil so we might emulate their good and discard their sin. This enables us to become great servants of God because we learn from God's servants' mistakes. Knowing their mistakes and shortfalls, we only embrace their strengths of ministry. Therefore, it is always wise to chew the meat and throw away the bones.
- Spiritual Fathers influence The Body Christ Body of Christ of our day and tomorrow.

STUDY TO SHOW YOURSELVES APPROVED UNTO GOD

1. Why is the character in the life of a servant of God more beneficial than knowledge?
 2. What is more excellent knowledge or wisdom?
 3. How does wisdom supersede knowledge?
 4. Explain the link between preaching and Leadership.
 5. Explain natural and Spiritual Fatherhood.
 6. What was the hallmark of Christ's ministry to his disciples?
 7. Are all five members of the Fivefold Ministry Spiritual Fathers?
 8. Why must Spiritual Sons study the lifestyle and ministry of The Lord's Old and New Testament Ministers?
-

CHAPTER 3
THE POWER OF REPRODUCTION

1 CORINTHIANS 15:49

JUST AS WE HAVE BORNE THE IMAGE OF THE MAN OF
DUST, WE SHALL ALSO BEAR THE IMAGE OF THE MAN OF HEAVEN.

PREAMBLE

I believe one of the greatest Gifts (other than Salvation) God has given man is THE GIFT OF REPRODUCTION. An outstanding miracle takes place when spouses become one. They reproduce after their kind. No wonder The Word of God teaches that the marriage bed is undefiled:

HEBREWS 13:4 ESV: LET MARRIAGE BE HELD IN HONOR AMONG ALL, AND
LET THE MARRIAGE BED BE UNDEFILED, FOR GOD WILL JUDGE THE SEXUALLY
IMMORAL AND ADULTEROUS.

Some dear readers may ponder why I have reached this remarkable conclusion. My answer is Word-based. Just as God is The Creator of humanity, whom He created in His image and likeness, has God empowered us to reproduce after our kind?

We must understand the level of empowerment of reproduction God Almighty has blessed humanity with. Humanity, in most cases, concentrates on the physical aspect. Yet, there is a spiritual aspect as well. Reproducing after our kind is a two-fold blessing of reproduction. There is the physical aspect and, more so, the spiritual aspect.

With every blessing our loving God bestows on us, there is always the accompaniment of accountability. There is a day of accountability. We must answer to The Lord God how we lived up to this wondrous twofold blessing of reproduction. And therefore, we must purpose within our hearts (inner man) by the Grace of our Lord; we will not just try our best but do our best to reproduce after our kind both physically and spiritually. However, with one significant distinction.

Our spiritual emphasis is that our Spiritual Sons do not become like us but more so like Jesus, for in us there is imperfection:

ROMANS 3:23: FOR ALL HAVE SINNED AND FALL SHORT OF THE GLORY OF GOD,

UNDERSTANDING THE TWO-FOLD BLESSING

Spouses both carry the same responsibility for raising their children. Though the man works to bring food to the table for the family, it does not excuse him from his spiritual duty in endeavoring by the Grace of God to conform his children to the image and likeness of God. On the other hand, the wife spends more time with the children (if she is not working), and therefore she has more time to drive home the teachings of God's Word the Father brings to the children.

Raising children is a grave responsibility and yet a great blessing as well. My dear wife (Dolores) has always said: "WE DON'T JUST RAISE OUR CHILDREN FOR OURSELVES, BUT FOR THE WORLD AS WELL." I want to add a little more to her remarkable and profound statement: "AND THE KINGDOM OF GOD AS WELL." Our children, when raised in fear of God, will most definitely be a blessing and a joy to us, to the world, and to the Kingdom of God as well:

PROVERBS 22:6: TRAIN UP A CHILD IN THE WAY HE SHOULD GO; EVEN IF HE IS OLD, HE WILL NOT DEPART FROM IT.

Planted seed brings a child into the world. Without the seed, it is impossible. The Gospel of Jesus is the seed that brings about The Born-Again experience. It is the power of The Gospel which regenerates those dead in trespasses and sin:

EPHESIANS 2:1-5: AND YOU WERE DEAD IN THE TRESPASSES AND SINS ² IN WHICH YOU ONCE WALKED, FOLLOWING THE COURSE OF THIS WORLD, FOLLOWING THE PRINCE OF THE POWER OF THE AIR, THE SPIRIT THAT IS NOW AT WORK IN THE SONS OF DISOBEDIENCE— ³ AMONG WHOM WE ALL ONCE LIVED IN THE PASSIONS OF OUR FLESH, CARRYING OUT THE DESIRES OF THE BODY AND THE MIND, AND WERE BY NATURE CHILDREN OF WRATH, LIKE THE REST OF MANKIND. ⁴ BUT GOD, BEING RICH IN MERCY, BECAUSE OF THE GREAT LOVE WITH WHICH HE LOVED US, ⁵ EVEN WHEN WE WERE DEAD

IN OUR TRESPASSES, MADE US ALIVE TOGETHER WITH CHRIST—BY GRACE
YOU HAVE BEEN SAVED.

Under the unction of The Holy Spirit, the preachers of The Gospel sow the seed of God's regenerative (giving new life) power. Heaven rejoices when the depraved come to The Lord. The Preacher gleefully rejoices, yet many do not know the responsibility going with that joy. I am of the personal persuasion; when people accept Jesus under my ministry, I am automatically responsible for their personal growth in The Lord. However, being a mobile minister, I hand the new converts to Pastors.

When people are Born-Again under our ministries in our Local Churches, we must take full responsibility for developing the converts. Follow-up work is essential. Clear doctrine and sound character Christians should be assigned to the new convert to build a friendly and meaningful relationship. A recent convert should never be left alone for the mere fact; many converts doubt their decision after accepting Jesus as their Personal Saviour.

Often, many accept The Lord when witnessed by Christians, not by The Fivefold Ministry. Therefore, these recent converts must be introduced to the Local Church Leadership as soon as possible when this takes place. The leadership with experience with new converts encourages them to join a New Converts Educational Program, which helps the recent convert grow and begin participating in The Church's spiritual activities.

IMPARTING THE FUNDAMENTAL (ULTIMATE) VISION

Too often, pastoral, Spiritual Fathers concentrate on imparting the vision of the house (the local church) to the new convert. However, a wise Father emphasizes God's will and purposes for the Spiritual Son (pupil and disciple). Therefore, Ministry and Gifts will initially not be mentioned and taught; instead, the concentration must be on remolding the image and likeness of God lost because of sin. This is the prime vision for all of God's people.

ROMANS 8:29: FOR THOSE WHOM HE FOREKNEW HE ALSO PREDESTINED TO
BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON, SO THAT HE MIGHT BE THE
FIRSTBORN AMONG MANY BROTHERS.

Seasoned (experienced) Spiritual Fathers understand Christian development's chronological sequence (order). They never place the cart before the horse. Character is what the Father concentrates on initially.

Once the Father sees spiritual growth, the Father starts a ministerial program. Experienced Spiritual Fathers always teach the Spiritual Sons that Christ-like character always precedes Christ-like ministry. Spiritual Sons must know that ministry flows from a relationship with Christ and the development of Christ-like character. Ministry without Godly character is repugnant (abomination). When A minister does not live up to Christian standards, all Ministers are painted with the same tar brush, and thus people shun and reject The Gospel.

I have seen how many of God's servants (including myself) have concentrated on teaching new converts Doctrine (the Fundamental Beliefs of The Local Church). As a Spiritual Father, I have learned over time that my Fathering was not following the Scriptural Chronological order (step by step). Instead, I was putting the cart before the horse, which was no doubt a significant mistake in the early years of my ministry. Instead of concentrating on Practical Christian Living, I foolishly focused on knowledge. I realized I had raised some intellectuals over the years, yet many were still captive to sin's degradation (filth). I have since changed my strategy. I now teach Christ-like character first and then move on to Doctrine. God's Word, Grace, and the Holy Spirit's power and following the chronological sequence (order) of character first and then knowledge helps the Spiritual Son mature more rapidly. The Christlike character becomes second nature to the Spiritual Son, and thus he humbly handles the knowledge of God's Word:

1 CORINTHIANS 2:14: THE NATURAL PERSON DOES NOT ACCEPT THE THINGS OF THE SPIRIT OF GOD, FOR THEY ARE FOLLY TO HIM, AND HE IS NOT ABLE TO UNDERSTAND THEM BECAUSE THEY ARE SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED.

Let me share an analogy that helps us first grasp the foolishness of teaching new converts doctrine. I am and was always a lover of bread. I love bread and jam. However, when we were young, our moms never gave us a loaf of bread in our hands to eat. We would not know where to begin eating from, and the bread would be too large to grasp and handle. So instead, mom sliced the bread, so we could take it and enjoy it. Our wise Moms also never gave us the crust of the bread. It was too hard for our milk teeth, and if we did eat the crust, we could choke on it.

Two analogies are in The Word of God to describe The Scriptures. Both pertain to our daily sustenance, which is Milk and Bread:

1 PETER 2:2: LIKE NEWBORN INFANTS, LONG FOR THE PURE SPIRITUAL MILK, THAT BY IT YOU MAY GROW UP INTO SALVATION—

JOHN 6:51: I AM THE LIVING BREAD THAT CAME DOWN FROM HEAVEN. IF ANYONE EATS OF THIS BREAD, HE LIVES FOREVER. AND THE BREAD GIVEN FOR THE WORLD'S LIFE IS MY FLESH."

Under the inspiration of The Holy Spirit, Apostle Peter stresses that new converts are spiritual babies. Therefore, their spiritual diet of the milk of God's Word best suits their spiritual well-being and growth. Peter, a wise man of God, is clearly saying (without many words, though) that the new converts are not ready for The Meat of The Word. He knows the danger the baby in the faith faces when eating bread and meat. They would choke and die spiritually. Therefore, Peter lays down the chronological order of spiritually feeding new converts, the milk first, the bread, and the meat of the Word.

The words of Jesus in John 6:51 somehow seem to endorse (support) what Peter had written. To grasp this, we need to remind ourselves of the audience of Jesus when He spoke those words of truth. The audience was a Jewish group of adults who were confused. Jesus taught of Himself being The Bread of Life. This was beyond their spiritual understanding, and no wonder they choked on the teaching. They were not ready for The Bread. Jesus purposely gave them the instruction of him being The Bread of Life because they wanted Jesus to perform another miracle. They wanted the miracle and not the miracle worker. They wanted The Bread that God rained down from heaven during the 40 years of wandering in the wilderness, not the true Bread of Life.

DRIVING HOME, THE PERFECT WILL OF GOD

The Father initially concentrates on bringing the Spiritual Son to grasp his prime target. But, first, as a young convert, ask him about his life's goal. Spiritual Fathers should not be surprised that their answers miss the mark. We are dealing with new converts, babes in the Faith. At all times, Spiritual Fathers must not always concentrate on their son's imperfections. Instead, they must focus on the potential within the Spiritual Son, which leads to perfection when directed toward righteous

living. The role of the Father is to redirect the Spiritual Son onto the right path.

I have always understood that before I can have a vision for the world, I must have a vision for myself. Therefore, I must change myself before I try to change the world for the better.

The Father must ingrain in the spirit of the Spiritual Son God's Holy Word and give him the understanding before God uses him to influence the world with God's Holy Word. He first must be controlled by God's Word himself. He must cleanse himself first before he cleanses the world. The Father must drive home to the Spiritual Son just what is God's will for his life. So be it that there is a concentration on the ministry. The Spiritual Father must not throw a wet blanket over the Spiritual Son. Instead, the Father must lovingly direct him to the perfect will of God, which I have previously mentioned: That we may be conformed to the image of God's son (see Romans 8:28). Once understood and worked unto, developing the Spiritual Son's unique ministry may begin.

It is paramount that the Spiritual Son understands the purpose of his God-given personal vision. He must see that his vision keeps him on the Christian Road. His vision must become his driving force. It is in this area that the Father plays a dynamic role. It is in our Christian baby stage that we are prone to failure. A baby is dependent on the parents. He wets himself. The baby messes himself. He cannot clean himself up. Mom and Dad must change their napkins constantly. He cannot feed himself. The baby messes all over with the food. He does not know what to eat.

A Spiritual Father is a spiritual parent. His work is so like the natural parent. No doubt it is hard work. However, the reward is great. Some people will never understand the joy our biological children bring us. My wife and I always felt we were incomplete without our children. As a man and a woman, we became ONE through marriage – what a blessing from Almighty God. And yet, marriage is another blessing: From oneness, God blesses us to become a family. We reproduce after our kind and in our image and likeness. Spiritual Fathering is nothing less than producing after your type and more like Jesus. As the Father imparts his life and ministry to the Spiritual Son, there comes that wonderful moment when he sees the reflection of his Godly lifestyle and God's anointing shining through his Son.

Rest assured, there is no greater joy in reproducing your life (by this, I mean your Godly spiritual character) and ministry to God's people.

SPIRITUAL APPLICATIONS

1

ACCOUNTABILITY

Ministers of God have a grave responsibility of reproducing after their kind. God who called us has blessed us with an Ascended Gifted Ministry for perfecting the saints, the ministry's work, and the edifying of The Body of Christ (see Ephesians 4:7-16). No doubt, this is a grave (serious) responsibility (obligation) that no servant of God can ignore. The Gift is a responsibility, and we are also accountable to God. At the Bema Judgement, we must give an account of our Stewardship. Indeed, this is an Act of Faith on God's part toward choosing you and me as His Ascended Gifted Servants. God trusts us with His creation and believes in you and me to live up to our calling and responsibility. As God's Servants, we hold the eternal destiny of those whom God foreordained as Ministers of the glorious Gospel.

Jeremiah, the Weeping Prophet, was set aside for ministry before being placed in his mother's womb (see Jeremiah Chapter 1). As God's Servants, we are accountable for all who come under our ministry's ambit (sphere, field). We must constantly seek out those saints of God whom God has chosen as Ascended Gifts and Father them to develop their ministries.

2

STUDY

All Ascended Gifts must glean how The Old Testament Prophets and The New Testament Ascended Gifts Fathered and trained their Spiritual Sons.

Their Spiritual Sons follow their Godly Father's example.

3

VISION

Ascended Gifted Ministers know that God's people perish without a vision. Therefore, the Spiritual Father must instill (impart) to the Spiritual Son a resolve (steadfastness, unwavering resolution) to

discover his dream, no matter what circumstances prevail. One of the significant mistakes Spiritual Fathers make is imparting their vision to the Spiritual Son. Many Spiritual Fathers believe God appoints Spiritual Sons to serve their Spiritual Father in the Father's vision. No doubt Joshua served Moses, and Elisha poured water on the hands of Elijah. However, these two mighty men of God were not called and appointed by God to be carbon copies of their Spiritual Fathers. They were called and appointed by God to be Prophets of God to the nation of Israel. I know of a South African man of God who appointed eight Pastors. A Father of one of the appointed Pastors asked the Pastor why he appointed eight new Pastors. His reply was a shocker. They were called and appointed by the Pastor to serve the Pastor. No doubt, the Father of the newly appointed Pastor corrected the Pastor with these wise words:

“PASTORS ARE NOT CALLED TO SERVE PASTORS. THEY ARE CALLED TO SERVE GOD AND GOD'S PEOPLE.

MATHEW 20:25-28: BUT JESUS CALLED THEM TO HIM AND SAID, “YOU KNOW THAT THE RULERS OF THE GENTILES LORD IT OVER THEM, AND THEIR GREAT ONES EXERCISE AUTHORITY OVER THEM. ²⁶ IT SHALL NOT BE SO AMONG YOU. BUT WHOEVER WOULD BE GREAT AMONG YOU MUST BE YOUR SERVANT, ²⁷ AND WHOEVER WOULD BE FIRST AMONG YOU MUST BE YOUR SLAVE, ²⁸ EVEN AS THE SON OF MAN CAME NOT TO BE SERVED BUT TO SERVE, AND TO GIVE HIS LIFE AS A RANSOM FOR MANY.” (SEE ALSO MARK 10:45)

Wise and prudent Spiritual Fathers must not train their Spiritual Sons to embrace the vision of their Spiritual Fathers. I say this because many men of God move away from the true vision of Romans 8:29. As their congregations grow numerically, they build epicenters to house them. The Holy Spirit's mandate for Spiritual Fathers is to help their Spiritual Sons discover and develop their God-given personal vision. The Scripture dealing with the call of Jeremiah endorses (approves) and instructs each man and woman of God have their God-appointed vision:

JEREMIAH 1:4-5: NOW THE WORD OF THE LORD CAME SAYING,⁵“BEFORE I FORMED YOU IN THE WOMB, I KNEW YOU, AND BEFORE YOU WERE BORN, I CONSECRATED YOU; I APPOINTED YOU A PROPHET TO THE NATIONS.”

Once the Spiritual Son discovers his Ascended Gift, the Spiritual Father must instruct The Son that Satan will hound him night and day to deter the Son from his God-directed vision. Teachings on Moses, Joseph, and Jeremiah’s sufferings help the Son discover that, like these great men of God, with vision, they are knocked down by the evil powers of darkness. However, though knocked down, they were not knocked out. Instead, these men of God rose each time with a greater resolve to complete what God had laid upon their spirits. The suffering experiences of Moses, Joseph, and Jeremiah will help the Son discover that God’s vision and calling caused them to get up from the canvas. The wise adage: The battle is not lost until won. No wonder the Bible teaches: WE ARE MORE THAN CONQUERORS IN CHRIST.

As a young minister, I always wondered how it was that though tried and tested, men of God continued regardless. Yet, I believed they continued for they knew that without a vision from God, people their fellow man would surely perish (see Proverbs 29:18), and therefore I share this acronym of vision with you and that to live by:

VISION
INSPIRES
SPIRITUAL
INSIGHTS
OVER
NEGATIVITY.

A GOD-IMPARTED VISION IS SIMPLY LOOKING AHEAD THROUGH THE LENS OF GOD. Therefore, the spiritual Son would not allow satanic attacks to deter him from his God-ordained vision due to his knowledge gained, and his vision understood.

The Spiritual Father must convince the Spiritual Son of why Satan harasses the son continuously; the son becomes a force of anointed Holy Spirit power.

SUMMARY

GOD'S GOODNESS TOWARD HUMANITY HAS BLESSED HUMANITY TO REPRODUCE AFTER HIS IMAGE AND LIKENESS, JUST AS GOD HAD CREATED MAN IN HIS IMAGE AND LIKENESS. FURTHERMORE, IT IS THE GRAVE RESPONSIBILITY OF NATURAL AND SPIRITUAL PARENTS TO DEVELOP IN THEIR NATURAL AND SPIRITUAL CHILDREN THE IMAGE AND LIKENESS OF GOD.

JUST AS WE ARE RESPONSIBLE FOR RAISING OUR NATURAL CHILDREN TO REFLECT THE IMAGE OF GOD IN THEIR WALK BEFORE ALL MEN, SO ARE WE RESPONSIBLE AND ACCOUNTABLE FOR RAISING SPIRITUAL SONS AND DAUGHTERS OF THE FAITH WHO FULFIL THEIR CALLING AS MINISTERS OF THE GOSPEL OF JESUS CHRIST

MAN IS NOT ONLY A PHYSICAL BEING BUT ALSO A SPIRITUAL BEING. THEREFORE, AS ASCENDED GIFTED SPIRITUAL FATHERS TO THE BODY OF CHRIST, WE MUST SEEK OUT THOSE IN OUR CONGREGATIONS ON WHOM THE LORD HAS HIS HAND UPON FOR FUTURE MINISTRY. ONCE WE DISCOVER WHO THEY ARE THROUGH SINCERE INTERCESSION AND SEEKING COUNSEL AND CONFIRMATION FROM FELLOW MINISTERS, WE MUST ATTACH OURSELVES TO THEM AND BEGIN THE PROCESS OF FATHERING THEM FOR THE BENEFIT OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD.

OUR CONCENTRATION ON OUR SPIRITUAL SONS IS FIRST TO DEVELOP A SINCERE RELATIONSHIP OF FRIENDSHIP AND TRUST. THEY BEAR IN MIND THAT PEOPLE SUBMIT TO AND RESPECT THOSE SERVANTS OF GOD WHO ARE ENTHUSIASTIC ABOUT BEFRIENDING THEIR CONGREGATION MEMBERS.

FROM THE ONSET OF THE FATHERING PROGRAM, THE EMPHASIS OF THE TRAINING PROGRAM IS TO REPRODUCE THE CHARACTER AND NATURE OF CHRIST IN THE SPIRITUAL SON.

CHAPTER 4
SANCTIFICATION OVERCOMING BAD HABITS

ROMANS 7:14-20

WE KNOW THE LAW IS SPIRITUAL, BUT I AM OF THE FLESH, SOLD UNDER SIN. ¹⁵ FOR I DO NOT UNDERSTAND MY ACTIONS. I DO NOT DO WHAT I WANT, BUT I DO THE VERY THING I HATE. ¹⁶ NOW, IF I DO NOT WANT, I AGREE WITH THE LAW THAT IT IS GOOD. ¹⁷ SO NOW IT IS NO LONGER I WHO DO IT, BUT SIN THAT DWELLS WITHIN ME. ¹⁸ FOR I KNOW THAT NOTHING GOOD DWELLS IN ME, THAT IS, IN MY FLESH. I HAVE THE DESIRE TO DO WHAT IS RIGHT, BUT NOT THE ABILITY TO CARRY IT OUT. ¹⁹ FOR I DO NOT DO THE GOOD I WANT, BUT THE EVIL I DO NOT WANT IS WHAT I KEEP ON DOING. ²⁰ NOW, IF I DO WHAT I DO NOT WANT, IT IS NO LONGER I WHO DO IT, BUT SIN THAT DWELLS WITHIN ME.

PREAMBLE

I recall my early days of studying God's Word, and sad to say, many a time, I lost interest. There were several reasons why I lost interest. Firstly, I was studying that which was beyond my comprehension as a young convert. I was eating the meat of The Word and choking on it. Instead of drinking the sincere milk of God's Word, I was delving (investigating) into the truths of God's Word, which was beyond my spiritual maturity. Secondly, there was a hunger for knowledge.

Furthermore, my devotional time was not spiritually balanced. There was a lack of prayer and worship. I concentrated on reading biblical Revelation instead of concentrating on The Gospel of John. I wanted to know of all God's judgment during The Tribulation Period. As time went on, I must admit I lost interest. Frustration set in, and praise is to God in His peculiar and loving way. God ministered to me that my emphasis was in the wrong area. My focus was to know The Word of God concerning God's judgment. DEEP DOWN IN MY SPIRIT, THOUGH TO THIS DAY, I CAN NOT EXPLAIN IT. I FELT THE TUG OF THE HOLY SPIRIT REDIRECTING ME NOT JUST TO KNOW THE WORD OF GOD BUT THE GOD OF THE WORD AS WELL.

In my infant stage of salvation, I was studying the Judgements of God and not the Grace of God. In my early days of Salvation, I was learning the deep things of God. I realized I was in a state of spiritual confusion. I needed to know and experience The Abundant Grace of God and Deliverance.

The dear reader may wonder why all this is about me. Well, the answer is simple. Many new converts make the same mistake I made in my first stage of salvation. My concentration was on the KNOWLEDGE OF GOD'S JUDGMENTS DURING THE SEVEN-YEAR TRIBULATION PERIOD.

No doubt I was missing the mark. Delving into the doctrine of Eschatology was way beyond my understanding. Instead of concentrating on PERSONAL SANCTIFICATION, I delved into Eschatology (end-time doctrine), which is beyond the new convert's level of maturity. A wise and seasoned Spiritual Father must be aware of the recent convert's hunger for the knowledge of God's Word as noble (honorable) as the Son desires the knowledge of the Word of God the Spiritual Father should direct new converts and his Spiritual Sons toward PERSONAL SANCTIFICATION. The first work of the Spiritual Father must be toward developing Christlike character in his Spiritual Sons before leading them into the deep things of God. At the early stage of new converts, the Spiritual Father should direct them toward breaking free from sinful habits that plagued them. The wise Spiritual Father is aware of the new converts and the Spiritual Son's salvation; however, he must also be mindful that there are areas in their life from which they need deliverance. Therefore, he will initially concentrate on Personal Sanctification.

This chapter deals exclusively with The Sanctification of Spiritual Sons for the ministry. Due to the length of the Chapter, I have purposely divided the Chapter into Sections so as not to overload the reader with too much information. Nevertheless, the step-by-step chronological sequence is essential for grasping the need for Sanctification in the first stage of the Spiritual Son's walk with God. Furthermore, I have used the Hermeneutical Principle of Typology to clarify the doctrine of Personal Sanctification. Therefore, it would be wise for the Spiritual Father to bring brief teaching on The Tabernacle before informing the Spiritual Son

of his blessing as the modern-day Tabernacle and Habitation of The Holy Spirit. (refer to Chapter 9)

All Born-Again Children of God are sanctified by the efficacious shedding of Christ's eternal life-giving blood. This great act of love shown by Jesus gave God the righteous act to sanctify (set apart) man unto Himself once again. Sin and its horrible consequences had separated man from God (see Genesis 3).

God, eternally Holy, had banished man from The Garden of Eden and more so from His Holy presence. God covered their nakedness in His mercy by clothing them with animal skin, which He had killed to protect man's sinful state. Man banished from The Garden of Eden had a two-fold punishment:

- BANISHMENT (EXPULSION, EXILE) FROM THE GARDEN OF EDEN (A PLACE OR STATE OF GREAT HAPPINESS; AN UNSPOILT PARADISE).
- BANISHMENT FROM GOD (EXPULSION FROM THE HOLY PRESENCE OF GOD).

God reconciles man to Himself through the Born-Again experience (see John 3:1-6). The Born-Again experience reunites man with God. However, although the efficacious atonement of Christ has accomplished the reconciliation, there is a strong possibility that the Born-Again Christians in the infancy stage of their conversion may go back to the things they were acquainted with within their past. As much as the new convert wants to, he cannot break free from the bad habits which had him bound. They are most vulnerable during the early stage of their conversion. They are in the dangerous stage of backsliding (going back to their old lifestyle). At this pivotal time, the parental characteristics of the Fathering ability of the Spiritual Father shine forth. He does not scold the Spiritual Son; instead, lovingly, he consoles him, knowing what the guilt complex is doing to his Spiritual Son, and thus begins teaching his Spiritual Son how to overcome past bad habits. He sets forth a chronological spiritual pattern of teaching to secure victory over these bad habits that keep cropping up:

- OVERCOMING BAD HABITS

- THE POWER OF CONFESSION AND FORGIVENESS
- THE LIFE AND DEATH PRINCIPLE (CODE, ATTITUDE)
- OVERCOMING THE GUILT COMPLEX
- SPIRITUAL ARMAMENT
- THE SPIRITUAL SON'S CONFIDANT
- BELIEVING IN SELF.
- TRUSTING GOD.
- SEEING THE VICTORY

OVERCOMING BAD HABITS

It is difficult to break free from habits. They become a part of our lifestyle. As much as we do our best to break free, habits hold us captive. Our efforts to rid ourselves of them are very noble. However, as noble as our actions are, we do not have the resisting power to overcome them. We need God's power, and oft-times, God sends a precious saint of God to help us overcome bad habits.

Linda Maud Fynn, a dear family friend, shared a remarkable truth about the difficulty of breaking a habit. She shared it with my wife and me about 40 years ago. The mere fact that I can remember all that Linda Maud shared depicts the remarkable blessing we received.

Linda asked me to spell the word habit. I spelled it out very loudly to her and Dolores – HABIT. Linda then asked me to drop the H and to tell her what was left of the Word. I gleefully answered ABIT. Her reply was correct, adding that though I dropped the H from the Word HABIT, we were left with an A BIT of the HABIT.

Linda then asked me to drop the H and the A from the Word HABIT. I gleefully exclaimed. I was left with BIT. She jokingly replied that the H and the A were taken away from H A B I T and left with a BIT of the HABIT. Finally, our dear friend said to take away the H, the A, and the B from HABIT. What remained? Our answer, we were left with IT from the HABIT. I trust the dear reader has seen how difficult it is to get away from the word HABIT. With that in mind, how much more must it take to break free from the actual HABIT itself? No matter how we try to break free of our destructive, sinful habits, we fail miserably, proving that we need a higher power to aid us in overcoming them. This available power is none other than God.

Often God places certain people around us to help us overcome our bad habits. Glen Noel, a dear friend, helped me overcome my cigarette-smoking habit. Like me, he was in the building trade, and at lunchtime, the tradesmen would get together to have a time of good eating, relaxing, and being South Africans. The highlight of lunchtime was teasing each other. After eating, the fun would start, but first, everyone would smoke their unique cigarette brands, and then the teasing and laughter would begin. Someone noticed that Glen was not smoking and caringly offered Glen a cigarette. Glen replied, no, thank you, and then took a Scripture Memory Box from his pocket and offered the kind gentleman A VERSE OF SCRIPTURE. This has also been in my memory bank for close to 40 years. By the Grace of our Lord, Glenn replaced his lousy smoking habit with A GOOD HABIT. Instead of having a cigarette, Glenn would have a Verse of Scripture and what Glenn knew was good, he offered others. I gained a wonderful spiritual lesson from Glenn: to break away from bad habits. We must replace them with good habits. Undoubtedly, breaking free from bad habits is more than just replacing this with good habits. Often, we need to fast, pray, and trust God for deliverance. The Spiritual Father needs to come alongside the new convert (the prospective Son) and help him trust God for victory over his bad habits.

As much as the Father will pray for the Spiritual Son and encourage him to pray, the Father must instill faith in the son concerning how deliverance comes via The Word of God.

JOHN 8:36: SO, IF THE SON SETS YOU FREE, YOU FREE INDEED.

MARK 11:24: THEREFORE I TELL YOU, WHATEVER YOU ASK IN PRAYER, BELIEVE THAT YOU HAVE RECEIVED^[A] IT, AND IT IS YOURS.

The wise Father must impart to the Spiritual Son how deliverance comes. Though prayer plays an active part in redemption, the Spiritual Son must realize he has to mix his Prayer with Faith and Trust in The Word of God. Prayer goes unanswered outside The Threefold Cord, Persistent Prayer, Ongoing Faith, and Study of The Word. Therefore, the Spiritual Father must deposit this truth within the inner man of the Spiritual Son. The dear reader may wonder why? The answer may be shocking; however, one must be candid about the fact that the Father must safeguard the

Spiritual Son against the spirit of pride, and we all know that pride goes before a fall.

Some Ministers often set a terrible example by glorifying that God had answered their prayers. Oft times, their emphasis is that THEY PRAYED and not so much that God had responded. So often hear how Ministers emphasize how they prayed, and God healed so and so, met this person's need, etc. Yes, we must testify, but always it is not so much who has prayed; instead, it is God who answers our prayers for the mere fact whoever has prayed has seasoned (mixed) his prayer with Faith (Mk 11:24) and trusted in The Word of God (see Isaiah 55:11). God must get the glory. This is undoubtedly an essential lesson in Prayer that the Spiritual Son must understand. It is not so much who had prayed. Instead, the emphasis must be on God, who graciously answered the prayer.

Old bad habits are made away with as we replace them with good new habits. However, we should not fool ourselves into thinking that new habits are born overnight. Habits are not like INSTANT COFFEE. It is not like pouring boiling water into the coffee; you can drink it at once. Forming a habit is a tedious (tiresome, mind-numbing) task. Creating new habits takes ardent (passionate, vigorous) discipline, which may add considerable time.

Dr. Maxwell Maltz, a renowned plastic surgeon, researched how HABITS ARE FORMED AND BROKEN. He noticed it took his patients 21 days to note their new faces. After this period, they adjusted to their new look. This outstanding surgeon also noticed that those who had their limbs amputated had a phantom limb for 21 days before adjusting to their unique situation. He also noted that it took his patients about 21 days for the old image to dissolve and a new one to jell.

In 1960, Dr. Maltz completed a book entitled Psycho-Cybernetics (audiobook), which sadly was misinterpreted by many "self-help" professional men like Zig Ziglar, Brian Tracy, and Tony Robbins. Sadly, these self-help professionals misconstrued the number of days. They emphasized that it took 21 days to form a new habit, while Dr. Maltz noted it takes a minimum of 21 days to create a new habit (note the word minimum). The distinction between Ziglar, Tracy, and Robbins insisted it took 21 days, while Dr. Maltz said A MINIMUM OF 21 DAYS. Thus, the

myth that it took 21 days to form a habit was born. Just imagine three weeks, and you are a new man. This myth gained great popularity. Finally, Philippa Lally, a health psychologist, and her committed research team dealt the illusion a death blow. They held the research at University College London. The findings of this study were published in the European Journal of Social Psychology.

Her research team of ninety-six people all chose one habit for an extended period of 12 weeks. Their daily routine was to report whether they practiced the habit and how automatic it felt. The habits were essential such as drinking a bottle of water with their lunch and running 15 minutes before supper. After the twelve-week exercise, the researchers analyzed the data and came to the following conclusions:

- ON AVERAGE, IT TAKES MORE THAN 2 MONTHS BEFORE A NEW BEHAVIOUR (HABIT) BECOMES AUTOMATIC — 66 DAYS, TO BE EXACT.
- AND HOW LONG IT TAKES A NEW HABIT TO FORM CAN VARY WIDELY DEPENDING ON THE BEHAVIOUR, THE PERSON, AND THE CIRCUMSTANCES.

In Lally's study, it took anywhere from 18 to 254 days for people to form a new habit. In other words, if you want to set your expectations appropriately, it will take anywhere from two to eight months to build a new behavior into your life — not 21 days.

The researchers also found that “missing one opportunity to perform the behavior did not materially affect the habit formation process.” In other words, it does not matter if you mess up now and then. Building better habits is not an all-or-nothing process.

James Clear writes an informative booklet: *TRANSFORM YOUR HABITS* (second edition). As much as we believe in the power of prayer and more so deliverance over habits and that instantly, many Spiritual Sons will struggle to break free from bad habits. And therefore, it would be wise or the Father to use the book: *TRANSFORM YOUR HABITS* to instruct the Spiritual Son.

SPIRITUAL APPLICATIONS

1

REPLACING HABITS WITH GODLY HABITS IS ESSENTIAL.

The Spiritual Son must know that the devil hounds him as never before, for he threatens the kingdom of darkness. And therefore, he must always walk in the spirit and reject all evil suggestions of the devil.

2

MASTERING THE SPIRITUAL ARMOR

The Father is responsible for making the Spiritual Son aware of God's spiritual armor to overcome the powers of darkness and for HOW, WHEN, and what specific weapon or weapons to use when tempted. When his Faith is attacked, he must use the threefold cord of weaponry: The Shield of Faith, The Sword of The Spirit, which is The Word of God, and Prayer in The Spirit. Satan and his demonic forces will tempt the Spiritual Son in the self-same way Adam and Eve were tempted: "

GENESIS 3:1: HAS GOD INDEED SAID, YOU SHALL NOT EAT OF EVERY TREE IN THE GARDEN 3:1

Doubt constantly expels Faith, while Faith dispels doubt. The Father must encourage the Spiritual Son to read Faith Scriptures and quote them. The Word of God read, repeated, and applied builds up Faith. The doubt the evil forces try to create will bounce off The Shield of Faith. The Spiritual Son raises The Shield of Faith and quotes The Word. Finally, just as a weightlifter lifts weights to strengthen and expands his muscles, in like manner must the Spiritual Son Pray in The Spirit developing his Faith Muscles:

EPHESIANS 6:18: PRAYING AT ALL TIMES IN THE SPIRIT, WITH ALL PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION. TO THAT END, KEEP ALERT WITH ALL PERSEVERANCE, MAKING SUPPLICATION FOR ALL THE SAINTS,

JUDE 20: BUT YOU, BELOVED, BUILDING YOURSELVES UP IN **YOUR MOST HOLY FAITH AND PRAYING IN THE HOLY SPIRIT,**

NOTA BENE

NOT ONLY IS THE SPIRITUAL SON TO WALK IN THE SPIRIT, BUT HE IS ALSO TO PRAY IN THE SPIRIT AS WELL. Therefore, THE FATHER MUST ENCOURAGE THE SPIRITUAL SON

CHAPTER 5
SANCTIFICATION

THE POWER OF CONFESSION AND FORGIVENESS

1 JOHN 1:9 KJV

IF WE CONFESS OUR SINS, HE IS FAITHFUL AND RIGHTEOUS TO FORGIVE US OUR SINS AND TO CLEANSE US FROM ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.

One of the most potent attacks of Satan against new Born-Again Christians is the guilt complex syndrome, which is the [feeling](#) of [guilt](#). No doubt, sin is against God's nature. Furthermore, Sin is Sin, and there is no such truth as venial and mortal sins. Sin is simply a transgression against God's holy standards. Therefore, I must admit there can be no exaggeration. Guilt is what makes us aware that we have sinned. However, I am using the adage "guilt complex" for the mere fact; Satan uses the guilt complex syndrome to his advantage.

Satan uses the guilt complex syndrome (condition, disease) to his advantage over us (more so new converts) when we commit the same sins repeatedly. Satan convinces us that we are not sincere Christians, for we cannot overcome our sins. Satan subtly convinces us that we are wasting our time and God's time. He tells us that The Christian life is a futile exercise and unlivable.

Like many New-Born-Again Christians, I, too, had that horrible experience. Oft times, I decided to give up. Though I loved God, I felt secure about God. I believed God was going to cut me off. So, I earnestly prayed, and God spoke to me through His Word:

1 JOHN 1:9: IF WE CONFESS OUR SINS, HE IS FAITHFUL AND TO FORGIVE US OUR SINS AND TO CLEANSE US FROM ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.

PSALM 103:12: AS FAR AS THE EAST IS FROM THE WEST, DOES HE REMOVE OUR TRANSGRESSIONS FROM US?

MICAH 7:19: HE WILL AGAIN HAVE COMPASSION ON US. HE WILL TREAD OUR INIQUITIES UNDERFOOT. YOU CAST ALL OUR SINS INTO THE DEPTHS OF THE SEA.

ISAIAH 43:25: I AM HE WHO BLOTS OUT YOUR TRANSGRESSIONS FOR MY OWN SAKE, AND NOT REMEMBER YOUR SINS.

HEBREWS 10:14-18: BY A SINGLE OFFERING, HE HAS PERFECTED FOR ALL TIME THOSE WHO ARE SANCTIFIED.¹⁵ AND THE HOLY SPIRIT ALSO BEARS WITNESS TO US; FOR AFTER SAYING,¹⁶ “THIS IS THE COVENANT THAT I WILL MAKE WITH THEM AFTER THOSE DAYS, DECLARES THE LORD: I WILL PUT MY LAWS ON THEIR HEARTS, AND WRITE THEM ON THEIR MINDS,” THEN HE ADDS, “I REMEMBER THEIR SINS AND THEIR LAWLESS DEEDS NO MORE.”¹⁸ WHERE THERE IS FORGIVENESS OF THESE AND NO LONGER ANY OFFERING FOR SIN.

REVELATION 12:11: AND THEY HAVE CONQUERED HIM BY THE BLOOD OF THE LAMB AND BY THE WORD OF THEIR TESTIMONY, FOR THEY LOVED NOT THEIR LIVES EVEN unto death.

ISAIAH 43:25: I AM HE WHO BLOTS OUT YOUR TRANSGRESSIONS FOR MY OWN SAKE, AND NOT REMEMBER YOUR SINS.

HEBREWS 10:14-18: BY A SINGLE OFFERING, HE HAS PERFECTED FOR ALL TIME THOSE WHO ARE SANCTIFIED.¹⁵ AND THE HOLY SPIRIT ALSO BEARS WITNESS TO US; FOR AFTER SAYING,¹⁶ “THIS IS THE COVENANT THAT I WILL MAKE WITH THEM AFTER THOSE DAYS, DECLARES THE LORD: I WILL PUT MY LAWS ON THEIR HEARTS, AND WRITE THEM ON THEIR MINDS,” THEN HE ADDS, “I WILL REMEMBER THEIR SINS AND THEIR LAWLESS DEEDS NO

MORE."¹⁸ WHERE THERE IS FORGIVENESS OF THESE AND NO LONGER ANY OFFERING FOR SIN.

REVELATION 12:11: AND THEY HAVE CONQUERED HIM BY THE BLOOD OF THE LAMB AND BY THE WORD OF THEIR TESTIMONY, FOR THEY LOVED NOT THEIR LIVES EVEN UNTO DEATH.

I seriously pondered over the above Scriptures and concluded that I was more than able to live The Christian Life. I realized God made adequate provision for me to live The Christian Life. Through, Confession I was purified. My sins were cast into the depths of the sea, never to be remembered again. God had given me conquering power over Satan via The Efficacious Blood of The Lamb (Jesus Christ), and all I had to do was to believe, act upon the provision and exclaim (cry out, shout, call out) my victory. With all the above embedded in my spirit, I concluded that though I often committed the same sin and confessed to them repeatedly, it was as if I was coming to God in confession for the first time. God removed my sin as far as the east from the west, casting my sin into the depths of the sea. And never to be remembered again. If my sins are forgotten and confessing the same sin again, it is as if God is hearing the confession of my habitual sin for the first time.

Born-Again Christians and, more so, Spiritual Sons suffer the very same attack from Satan. The Spiritual Son threatens Satan and his kingdom with his future ministry. Knowing the harm the future anointed Ascended Gift brings, Satan vigorously attacks the Spiritual Son at the early stage of his Born-Again experience and the first training period. Satan is very cunning and knows the best time to strike is when we are at our infant stage of salvation and training. The wise

Spiritual Fathers instruct their Sons thoroughly against The Guilt Complex Syndrome to ensure the Godly future of their Sons. However, the Father will encourage the Spiritual Son to trust God for deliverance over habitual sin. Finally, the Father bears the Spiritual Son up in prayer, knowing whom the Spiritual Son sets free is free indeed (see John 8:36).

STUDY TO SHOW YOURSELF APPROVED UNTO GOD

1 Explain the guilt complex.

CHAPTER 6
SANCTIFICATION

THE LIFE AND DEATH PRINCIPLE

ROMANS 7:14-25

WE KNOW THE LAW IS SPIRITUAL, BUT I AM OF THE FLESH, SOLD UNDER SIN. ¹⁵ FOR I DO NOT UNDERSTAND MY ACTIONS. So, I DO NOT DO WHAT I WANT, BUT I DO THE VERY THING I HATE. ¹⁶ NOW, IF I DO WHAT I DO NOT WANT, I AGREE WITH THE LAW THAT IT IS GOOD. ¹⁷ SO NOW IT IS NO LONGER I WHO DO IT, BUT SIN THAT DWELLS WITHIN ME. ¹⁸ FOR I KNOW THAT NOTHING GOOD DWELLS IN ME, THAT IS, IN MY FLESH. So, I HAVE THE DESIRE TO DO WHAT IS RIGHT, BUT NOT THE ABILITY TO CARRY IT OUT. ¹⁹ FOR I DO NOT DO THE GOOD I WANT, BUT THE EVIL I DO NOT WANT IS WHAT I KEEP ON DOING. ²⁰ NOW, IF I DO WHAT I DO NOT WANT, IT IS NO LONGER I WHO DO IT, BUT SIN THAT DWELLS WITHIN ME. ²¹ SO I FIND IT TO BE A LAW THAT WHEN I WANT TO DO RIGHT, EVIL LIES CLOSE AT HAND. ²² FOR I DELIGHT IN THE LAW OF GOD, IN MY INNER BEING, ²³ BUT I SEE IN MY MEMBERS ANOTHER LAW WAGING WAR AGAINST THE LAW OF MY MIND AND MAKING ME CAPTIVE TO THE LAW OF SIN THAT DWELLS IN MY MEMBERS. ²⁴ WRETCHED MEN THAT I AM! WHO WILL DELIVER ME FROM THIS BODY OF DEATH? ²⁵ THANKS BE TO GOD THROUGH JESUS CHRIST OUR LORD! SO THEN, I SERVE THE LAW OF GOD WITH MY MIND, BUT WITH MY FLESH, I SERVE THE LAW OF SIN.

Over the years of serving The Lord, I must admit that I have battled with personal Sanctification (living a holy life) like many fellow Christians. Apostle Paul, the mighty man of God, also acknowledged his sanctification problem:

ROMANS 7:19: FOR I DO NOT DO THE GOOD I WANT, BUT THE EVIL I DO NOT WANT IS WHAT I KEEP ON DOING.

Indeed, the above verse lifts our spirits. Even great men of God like Paul had problems with his sanctification. And therefore, it is no wonder that

after seeking God for help to overcome, God gives Paul a Revelation of Truth that makes him more than an overcomer:

ROMANS 6:11-14: ¹¹SO YOU ALSO MUST CONSIDER YOURSELVES DEAD TO SIN AND ALIVE TO GOD IN CHRIST JESUS. ¹²LET NOT SIN THEREFORE REIGN IN YOUR MORTAL BODY, TO MAKE YOU OBEY ITS PASSIONS. DO NOT PRESENT YOUR MEMBERS TO SIN AS INSTRUMENTS FOR UNRIGHTEOUSNESS BUT PRESENT YOURSELVES TO GOD AS THOSE WHO HAVE BEEN BROUGHT FROM DEATH TO LIFE, AND YOUR MEMBERS TO GOD AS INSTRUMENTS FOR RIGHTEOUSNESS. ¹⁴FOR SIN WILL HAVE NO DOMINION OVER YOU SINCE YOU ARE NOT UNDER LAW BUT UNDER GRACE.

Four words in the above Scripture resound victory over sinful habits: RECKON, REIGN, YIELD, and DOMINION. RECKON means to add up, calculate, and therefore the Spiritual Son must conclude in his mind that sin and sin's temptation no more controls his mind. He rejects the very thought of sin. Reign means sovereignty and control. The Father must convince the Spiritual Son that victory over sin is secured. Satan, the originator of Sin, is no more on the throne of his spirit. Jesus is on the throne of his Spirit. There is no need for the Spiritual Son to submit to the rule of Satan. Since the Born-Again experience, Jesus is now reigning and King of the Spiritual Son's life; therefore, he obeys Christ, not Satan. YIELD speaks not only of harvest but also of taking safety precautions.

Allow me the privilege of sharing my motor vehicle experience. One of the vital signs to adhere to and avoid an accident is the yield sign. It depicts a triangle upside down. This means stopping and ensuring no other vehicles are turning into you as you turn. I did not yield and made my turn and hit an oncoming car. It was my fault. When tempted, we must yield. We must stop and consider what happens if we do not yield. Sin has costly and damaging repercussions (consequences, effects). It robs us of our good testimony, and, no doubt, we suffer the terrible consequences of sin. Dominion means to rule over a person. Giving into evil temptation produces sin, that when continuing in sin, will no doubt lead to corruption dominating a person's life. The Spiritual Son, influenced by the Father's sound teaching and Christlike example, will bring victory to the Spiritual Son as the Spiritual Son makes up his mind:

HE HAS MADE UP HIS MIND (RECKONED). HE IS ALIVE UNTO GOD, AND GOD REIGNS. SUPREME CHRIST IS KING OF HIS LIFE, AND THEREFORE GOD REIGNS SUPREME

The Spiritual Son must YIELD over to Christ where there is no impending danger. The road is clear, and the Spiritual Son will reach his ultimate destination and that being eternally in the presence of His Saviour:

HEBREWS 4:12: FOR THE WORD OF GOD IS LIVING AND ACTIVE, SHARPER THAN ANY TWO-EDGED SWORD, PIERCING TO THE DIVISION OF SOUL AND SPIRIT, OF JOINTS AND MARROW, AND DISCERNING THE THOUGHTS AND INTENTIONS OF THE HEART.

JAMES 4:7: SUBMIT YOURSELVES, THEREFORE, TO GOD. RESIST THE DEVIL, AND HE WILL FLEE FROM YOU.

Christ, the Spiritual Son's Saviour, has total dominion, for the Spiritual Son lives no more by the Law. He lives under the Grace of God: One of the essential assignments the Father must assign to the Spiritual Son to help him overcome his past habits is the memorization of Scripture:

SPIRITUAL APPLICATIONS

1

HABITS DEVELOP CHARACTER

Good or bad Habits become our lifestyle, thus forming our character and personality.

2

THE POWER OF PRAISE AND WORSHIP

Oft times, the temptation is overwhelming. We buckle under the pressure and give in. When we sense we are about to give in, that is the time we must call upon The Lord in a new way. One might say we have been calling upon The Lord through prayer for help, quoting Scripture, and praying in the Spirit, yet the pressure of the temptation persists. At this time, we must use the knockout punch to the evil temptation. Before using the knockout punch, though we were using the arsenal (collection) of spiritual warfare, we must realize it is our effort, and therefore we must call upon The Lord with a new strategy (tactic). How do we do this?

First, we must Praise and Worship the Lord loudly during adverse temptation. We, after that, experience the presence of The Lord coming in on the temptation scene. The Word of God ensures this marvelous Truth: GOD INHABITS OUR PRAISES. God lives in our praises. I believe that the battle belongs to The Lord and the victory is ours. God makes His Presence known to Satan. We stand aside; we did all we could to overcome the temptation, and God seeing our sincerity, takes over and rebukes Satan, who flees from The Presence of God. A few years ago, I shared this with an Ascended Gifted Prophet. He asked for the Scriptural reference to what I shared. I must admit I had no Scripture. However, a few weeks ago, I was impressed with Michael the Archangel when contending with Satan for The Body of Moses:

JUDE 1:9: BUT WHEN THE ARCHANGEL MICHAEL, CONTENDING WITH THE DEVIL, WAS DISPUTING ABOUT THE BODY OF MOSES, HE DID NOT PRESUME TO PRONOUNCE A BLASPHEMOUS JUDGMENT BUT SAID, "THE LORD REBUKE YOU."

Michael, the Archangel, handed the matter over to The Lord. (And that is what the Spiritual Son must do when the Temptation overwhelms him, bearing in mind our victories are in and through Christ Jesus). How correct is the adage (proverb): "The battle is The Lord's; the victory is ours."

3

THE UNDENIABLE POWER OF GOD'S LOVE

When correcting his son, a wise Father seasons the correction with love and care. He conveys the spiritual fact that God hates sin. However, God never stops loving the sinner.

JAMES 5:19-20 [J.B. PHILLIPS NEW TESTAMENT](#) MY BROTHERS, IF ANY OF YOU SHOULD WANDER AWAY FROM THE TRUTH, AND ANOTHER SHOULD TURN HIM BACK ONTO THE RIGHT PATH, THEN THE LATTER MAY BE SURE THAT IN TURNING A MAN BACK FROM HIS WANDERING COURSE, HE HAS RESCUED A SOUL FROM DEATH, AND HIS LOVING ACTION COVERS A MULTITUDE OF SINS

NOTA BENE

The Father knowing of the power of The Guilt Complex, must bring the Spiritual Son to the understanding that no more does he live by The Law of Moses; he lives by the Grace of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ:

GALATIANS 3:24-25: SO THEN, THE LAW WAS OUR GUARDIAN UNTIL CHRIST CAME, IN ORDER, WE MIGHT BE JUSTIFIED BY FAITH. ²⁵ BUT NOW THAT FAITH HAS COME, WE ARE NO LONGER UNDER A GUARDIAN,

JOHN 1:17: FOR THE LAW WAS GIVEN THROUGH MOSES; GRACE AND TRUTH CAME THROUGH JESUS CHRIST. LATEST

Jesus said three meaningful words on The Cross: "IT IS FINISHED." What was FINISHED? The Law was completed (concluded, done away with, no more). Grace replaced the Law. Grace was ushered in because no man had the power to keep the Law. Only one man held the LAW, and that was Jesus Christ. Jesus was tempted in all fashion as all men conquered sin; therefore, He alone could say- "IT IS FINISHED." The Words of Jesus- IT IS FINISHED must resonate (echo) in the mind and spirit of the Spiritual Son. Sin no longer needs to control the Spiritual Son. His mind has been renewed with the words: "IT IS FINISHED." The stranglehold of the Spiritual Son's mind is now in his own hands as the Son appropriates (takes control of his mind). Satan is no more in charge.

The blood that flowed from the crown of thorns embedded into Christ's forehead purified the minds of God's Born-Again saints of God. So, it is the Blood of Jesus, the Word of God, and our confession of faith that sin has no more dominion over us: IT IS FINISHED.

Sin was conquered. However, the Spiritual Father must drive home the truth that Jesus not only canceled the Spiritual Son's sin; Jesus also removed THE GUILT OF THE SIN. I have always believed that when we are forgiven and allow the guilt complex to nag us, we doubt God's forgiveness, and we deny THE POWER OF THE SHED BLOOD OF JESUS, WHICH CLEANSSES US FROM ALL SIN. Furthermore, what Jesus accomplished at The Cross was an act of Grace, and the best way I can convey the power of Jesus' abundant GRACE is by sharing the acronym The Holy Spirit shared with me:

GOD'S

CHAPTER 7
SANCTIFICATION
OVERCOMING THE GUILT COMPLEX

PSALM 103:12 ESV

AS FAR AS THE EAST IS FROM THE WEST,
SO FAR, DOES HE REMOVE OUR TRANSGRESSIONS FROM US?

One of Satan's most potent (powerful) attacks against newborn-Again Christians is the exaggerated guilt complex syndrome. Furthermore, Sin is Sin, and there are no such truths as venial and mortal sins. Sin is simply transgression against God's holy standards. Therefore, I must admit there can be no exaggeration. Guilt is what makes us aware that we have sinned. However, I am using the adage "guilt complex" for the mere fact; Satan uses the guilt complex syndrome to his advantage.

When we commit the same sins repeatedly, Satan convinces us that we are not to be Christians; in fact, we cannot overcome our sins. Satan subtly convinces us that we are wasting our time and God's time. He tells us that the Christian Life is a futile exercise and unlivable.

Like many newborn-Again Christians, I, too, had that horrible experience. Oft times, I decided to give up. Though I loved God, I felt insecure about God. I believed God was going to cut me off. Therefore, I earnestly prayed, and I thanked God. He spoke to me through His Word:

1 JOHN 1:9: IF WE CONFESS OUR SINS, HE IS FAITHFUL AND TO FORGIVE US OUR SINS AND TO CLEANSE US FROM ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.

PSALM 103: 12: AS FAR AS THE EAST IS FROM THE WEST, SO FAR DOES HE REMOVE OUR TRANSGRESSIONS FROM US.

MICAH 7:19 HE WILL AGAIN HAVE COMPASSION ON US. HE WILL TREAD OUR INIQUITIES UNDERFOOT. YOU CAST ALL OUR SINS INTO THE DEPTHS OF THE SEA.

ISAIAH 43:25: “ I AM HE WHO BLOTS OUT YOUR TRANSGRESSIONS FOR MY OWN SAKE, AND I DO NOT REMEMBER YOUR SINS.

HEBREWS 10: 14-17: FOR BY A SINGLE OFFERING, HE HAS PERFECTED FOR ALL TIME THOSE WHO ARE BEING SANCTIFIED ¹⁵ AND THE HOLY SPIRIT ALSO BEARS WITNESS TO US; FOR AFTER SAYING,¹⁶ “THIS IS THE COVENANT THAT I WILL MAKE WITH THEM AFTER THOSE DAYS, DECLARES THE LORD: I WILL PUT MY LAWS ON THEIR HEARTS AND WRITE THEM ON THEIR MINDS,”¹⁷ THEN HE ADDS, “I WILL REMEMBER THEIR SINS AND THEIR LAWLESS DEEDS NO MORE.”

REVELATION 12:11: AND THEY HAVE CONQUERED HIM BY THE BLOOD OF THE LAMB AND BY THE WORD OF THEIR TESTIMONY, FOR THEY LOVED NOT THEIR LIVES EVEN UNTO DEATH.

I seriously pondered over the above Scriptures and concluded that I was more than able to live The Christian Life. God’s Grace through Jesus was more than enough for me to overcome the power of Satan’s evil temptations. I realized God made adequate provision for me to live The Christian Life. Confession of my sins to God purified me (see 1 John 1:9). My sins were far removed, and as far as the east is from the west. God was not going to remember my sins. My sins were cast into the depths of the sea and erased. God had given me conquering power over Satan via The Efficacious Blood of The Lamb (Jesus Christ). All I had to do was to believe, act upon the provision and exclaim (cry out, shout, call out) my victory. With all the above embedded in my spirit, I concluded that though I often committed the same sin repeatedly and confessed them often, it was as if I was coming to God in confession for the first time. God removed my sin as far as the east from the west, casting my sin into the depths of the sea, never remembered again, and it was as if God was hearing the confession of my habitual sin for the first time.

Born-Again Christians and Spiritual Sons suffer the same attack from Satan. The Spiritual Son threatens Satan and his kingdom with his future ministry. Knowing the harm, the future anointed Ascended Gift will have Satan vigorously attack the Spiritual Son at the early stage of his Born-Again experience and the first training period. Satan is very cunning and knows the best time to strike is when the Spiritual Son is at

A WORD FROM THE AUTHOR.

The following page depicts a Roman Soldier during the times of the early Church. Apostle Paul uses the weaponry of the Roman Soldier as an analogy (parallel) to the spiritual armor of Born-Again Christians. The Roman soldiers' weaponry was formed of six weapons of war. However, I believe Born- Again, children of God, have seven spiritual warfare weapons. The seventh is PRAYER. As powerful as they are, the six weapons must be undergirded (supported) by Prayer to conquer the enemy's persistent temptation for us to sin against our Lord.

THE ARMOR OF GOD

EPHESIANS 6:10-18

"... Be strong in the Lord and in his mighty power. Put on the full armor of God so that you can take your stand against the devil's schemes." v. 10, 11

The Shield of Faith (Eph. 6:16)

Faith is being sure that God will keep His promises. Faith in God protects you when you are tempted to doubt.



Feet Prepared with the Gospel of Peace (Eph. 6:15)

The Gospel of Peace is being right with God and being contented in troubled times. Jesus said peacemakers were blessed.

The Helmet of Salvation (Eph. 6:17)

Put on the Helmet of Salvation by believing that Jesus Christ died for your sins and rose again.

The Breastplate of Righteousness (Eph. 6:14)

Righteousness is being honest, good, humble, and fair to others. It means standing up for weaker people.

The Belt of Truth (Eph. 6:14)

Truth keeps us from giving in to the world's beliefs. Compare your beliefs and actions to the truth of the Word of God.

The Sword of the Spirit (Eph. 6:17)

which is the Word of God. God's Word is our offensive weapon. When we tell others what the Bible says, the Holy Spirit helps people see their bad thoughts and actions, and makes them want to be forgiven.

© Rose Publishing

CHAPTER 8
SPIRITUAL ARMAMENT

WEAPONS OF DEFENCE

EPHESIANS 6:13-18

THEREFORE, TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD, THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY AND, HAVING DONE ALL, STAND FIRM. ¹⁴ STANDS, THEREFORE, HAVING FASTENED ON THE BELT OF TRUTH AND HAVING PUT ON THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, ¹⁵ AND, AS SHOES FOR YOUR FEET, HAVING PUT ON THE READINESS GIVEN BY THE GOSPEL OF PEACE. ¹⁶ IN ALL CIRCUMSTANCES TAKE UP THE SHIELD OF FAITH, WITH WHICH YOU CAN EXTINGUISH ALL THE FLAMING DARTS OF THE EVIL ONE; ¹⁷ AND TAKE THE HELMET OF SALVATION, AND THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD, ¹⁸ PRAYING AT ALL TIMES IN THE SPIRIT, WITH ALL PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION. TO THAT END, KEEP ALERT WITH ALL PERSEVERANCE, MAKING SUPPLICATION FOR ALL THE SAINTS.

1. THE WEAPONS OF OUR WARFARE

All Born-Again Christians are enlisted in the army of God. Our enemies are Satan, his demonic horde of fallen angels, and false agents (see Ephesians 6). The Ascended Gifts of Christ are the Generals of Christ's army. The Ascended Gifts train The Body of Christ members in spiritual warfare against Satan and his army.

The first fact that the army of God must know about their enemy is that their enemy has already been defeated by none other than Jesus Christ. The attack he mounts against the soldiers of The Cross is in total denial of his defeat. He lives a lie. He is defeated. Being the evil person Satan is, he knows he cannot defeat God, and therefore Satan attacks God's prize possession, whom God had created in His image and likeness (see Genesis 1:26-28). Satan's evil mentality convinces him to attack God's

image and likeness; it is as if Satan is attacking God, for God's Born-Again children are children of God.

SATAN CAN NOT GET TO GOD, BUT HE SURE CAN GET TO GOD'S CHILDREN. This is because Satan knows the children of God are the apple of God's eyes, God's favorites.

God is a person, a Spirit who has feelings that expresses emotion when we are attacked. The Word of God teaches that God is touched with our infirmities' feelings, which means God identifies with our pain. Thus, when struck with evil temptation beyond our control, God feels the pain with us and therefore makes adequate provision from The Word of God, The Blood, and the power of The Holy Spirit for us to overcome.

God, our beloved Father, has therefore supplied an armory able to withstand every attack of Satan. Trained soldiers master their weaponry. They were taught to dismantle, clean, maintain, reassemble, and effectively use their weaponry. In simple terms, they master their weaponry. Using their weaponry becomes second nature to them. They use it instinctively, with no premeditation whatsoever. This is the Father's work; he must train his Spiritual Sons instinctively to use their weapons of spiritual warfare. They should clearly understand what weaponry is for protection and attack. Furthermore, the best means of defense is attack.

2. THE WEAPONS OF PROTECTION

Apostle Paul wisely mentions protective armory first and foremost. The question follows, WHY? Attacking the enemy with the best and most modern weaponry is senseless without protective gear.

THE BELT OF TRUTH

THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

SHOES FOR YOUR FEET

THE SHIELD OF FAITH

THE HELMET OF SALVATION

Interestingly, seven weapons were divided into two sections: Five weapons of Protection and two weapons of Attack. In the science of

Biblical Numerology, seven speaks of perfection, thus understanding that the weapons of Protection and Attack are perfect in overcoming the powers of darkness. Applying the number five speaks of the Grace of God, which is more than enough to protect us from enemy wiles (tricks). Number two talks about the two Testaments of The Bible.

THE BEST MEANS OF DEFENCE IS ATTACK. Do not wait for the enemy to come against you. We are mandated to go into all the world and preach that THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS AT HAND. This means those bound in the kingdom of darkness need no more be trapped in the realm of darkness as Christ has come to liberate them. All they need to do is accept Jesus as Lord and Saviour. They are set free from the powers of evil. We attack the forces of darkness by preaching The Efficacious (ever-effective) Gospel and teaching the new converts the principles of truth for righteous living.

Apostle Paul, the inspired writer of the book of Ephesians, wisely uses the language of his day that people of his time and even our time are remarkably familiar with. He wisely uses the teaching principle of The Law of Association, which takes the reader from the known to the unknown. In simple words, he uses the analogy of weapons of physical warfare to help us understand how similarly spiritual weapons operate. Paul was an astute (intelligent, competent) Teacher of The Word of God. He uses the Roman soldier and his weaponry to paint a vivid (bright, intense) picture of how our spiritual weapons are used:

THE BELT OF TRUTH IS TIED AROUND THE WAIST.

THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS IS ATTACHED TO THE CHEST.

THE FEET SHOD WITH THE PREPARATION OF THE GOSPEL OF PEACE

THE SWORD WAS PLACED IN A SHEATH ON THE BELT OF TRUTH.

THE HELMET OF SALVATION WAS ON THE HEAD.

2.1 THE BELT OF TRUTH

Speaking metaphorically (symbolically), The Belt of Truth is tied to the waist, thus securing our garments to the waist. Attached to the Belt of Truth is a sheath that firmly houses a Sword and a dagger. Making the spiritual comparison, we note John 17:17 ESV speaks of The Word of God as The Word of Truth:

SANCTIFY THEM THROUGH THY TRUTH: THY WORD IS TRUTH.

When firmly secured to our lifestyle, the Word of God helps us live according to the standards of God's Word and thus not fall into sin. The Word of God sanctifies, cleanses, and enables us to walk according to the holy standards of God's Word.

Satan is the Father of lies. One of his evil strategies is to misconstrue The Word of God. This is clear when we study the temptations of Jesus in the wilderness recorded in Mathew 4:1:11:

CHANGE STONES TO BREAD TO RELIEVE HIS HUNGER.

THE LEAP OF FAITH: JUMP FROM A PINNACLE AND RELY ON ANGELS TO BREAK HIS FALL.

WORSHIP SATAN IN RETURN FOR ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD.

2.1.1 THE TEMPTATION OF TURNING STONE INTO BREAD

Turning the stones into bread was to lure (entice) Jesus into an act of selfishness. The answer Jesus gave Satan is the exact answer SPIRITUAL FATHERS must tutor their Spiritual Sons:

MATHEW 4:4: "IT IS WRITTEN: 'MAN SHALL NOT LIVE ON BREAD ALONE, BUT ON EVERY WORD THAT COMES FROM THE MOUTH OF GOD.'

Jesus is The Bread of Life (The Word of God). His purpose in life was to lay down His life as a once and for all sacrifice for the redemption of humanity. As the Bread of Life, Jesus willingly gave His life, so that man could once again have a meaningful relationship with God and be eternal with God. The vital question that follows: Is our life as Born-Again Christians to be any different from the life of Christ? Is our life also meant to be a sacrifice for the spiritual benefit of humanity? In the Last Supper, Jesus shared with His Apostles clearly that our life, like our Savior's, is to be a SACRIFICE. Jesus said His Church was to re-enact The Last Supper: "DO THIS IN REMEMBRANCE OF ME." The breaking of The Bread and the sharing of The Bread were symbolic of Jesus giving His life. The pouring out of The Wine symbolized Christ shedding His blood, thus

appeasing God's judgment against humankind. Are we to share our life and shed our blood for humanity? Most answer NO and base it on Scripture: "THERE REMAINS NO MORE SACRIFICE FOR SIN." And yet I believe there is more than meets the eye when Apostle Paul taught:

1 CORINTHIANS 11:23-26: FOR I RECEIVED FROM THE LORD WHAT I ALSO DELIVERED TO YOU, THAT THE LORD JESUS ON THE NIGHT WHEN HE WAS BETRAYED AND TOOK BREAD, ²⁴ AND WHEN HE HAD GIVEN THANKS, HE BROKE IT AND SAID, "THIS IS MY BODY, WHICH IS FOR YOU. DO THIS IN REMEMBRANCE OF ME." ²⁵ IN THE SAME WAY, ALSO HE TOOK THE CUP AFTER SUPPER, SAYING, "THIS CUP IS THE NEW COVENANT IN MY BLOOD. DO THIS, AS OFTEN AS YOU DRINK IT, IN REMEMBRANCE OF ME." ²⁶ FOR AS OFTEN AS YOU EAT THIS BREAD AND DRINK THE CUP; YOU PROCLAIM THE LORD'S DEATH UNTIL HE COMES HE WAS BETRAYED AND TOOK BREAD, ²⁴ AND WHEN HE HAD GIVEN THANKS, HE BROKE IT AND SAID, "THIS IS MY BODY, WHICH IS FOR YOU. DO THIS IN REMEMBRANCE OF ME." ²⁵ IN THE SAME WAY, ALSO HE TOOK THE CUP AFTER SUPPER, SAYING, "THIS CUP IS THE NEW COVENANT IN MY BLOOD. DO THIS, AS OFTEN AS YOU DRINK IT, IN REMEMBRANCE OF ME." ²⁶ FOR AS OFTEN AS YOU EAT THIS BREAD AND DRINK THE CUP; YOU PROCLAIM THE LORD'S DEATH UNTIL HE COMES

Our emphasis has always been the re-enactment of The Lord's Supper, commonly termed Holy Communion. I wholeheartedly believe we must re-enact Holy Communion, yet it does not stop there. There is a deeper meaning, and may I add with firm conviction. The most renowned Scripture is John 3:16, and the second most meaningful Scripture to me is 1 John 3:16, which I believe helps us to grasp the example Jesus gives to us concerning His sacrificial lifestyle:

JOHN 3:16: FOR GOD SO LOVED THE WORLD, THAT HE GAVE HIS ONLY SON, THAT WHOEVER BELIEVES IN HIM SHOULD NOT PERISH BUT HAVE ETERNAL LIFE.

1 JOHN 3:16: WE KNOW LOVE, THAT HE LAID DOWN HIS LIFE FOR US, AND WE OUGHT TO LAY DOWN OUR LIVES FOR THE BROTHERS.

Jesus, our Saviour, said: “No man takes my life. I give my life.” For years as a preacher of The Word, I wrestled over 1 John 3:16. Was this God’s will that I give my life for the brethren? Did this mean I placed the brethren before myself? Scripture clarifies how we identify ourselves with the brethren and the unsaved.

GALATIANS 6:2: BEAR YE ONE ANOTHER BURDENS, AND SO FULFIL THE LAW OF CHRIST.

1 CORINTHIANS 12:25: THAT THERE MAY BE NO DIVISION IN THE BODY, BUT THE MEMBERS MAY HAVE THE SAME CARE FOR ANOTHER.

The two above Scriptures symbolize how Christians ought to esteem each other. I have a saying that I do my utmost to live up to:

I DO NOT SERVE JESUS CHRIST FOR WHAT I CAN RECEIVE FROM HIM; I SERVE JESUS FOR WHAT I CAN GIVE TO HIM AND WHAT I CAN GIVE TO HUMANITY, FOR WHOM JESUS SHED HIS LIFE’S BLOOD.

Self-centeredness and selfishness are not the marks of a faithful Christian. The life of a Christian is dying to self and putting others always before oneself. As Christians, there are three people, and to these three, we must die unto ---ME, MYSELF, AND I. Let us reiterate (repeat) the words of Apostle Paul:

GALATIANS 2:20: I HAVE BEEN CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST. IT IS NO LONGER I WHO LIVE, BUT CHRIST LIVES IN ME. AND THE LIFE I NOW LIVE IN THE FLESH, I LIVE BY FAITH IN THE SPIRITUAL SON OF GOD, WHO LOVED ME AND GAVE HIMSELF FOR ME.

Apostle Paul was an expert teacher of The Word and knew how to help God’s people to grasp his teaching. He gave illustrations that his audience and readers were familiar with, which is why he used the analogy of the armor of the Roman soldier. The Roman army was Paul’s most prominent and powerful army. The Roman soldiers were always in

the public eye; therefore, Apostle Paul used the armor of the Roman soldier as an analogy to the Christian's spiritual army.

2.1.2 THE TEMPTATION OF THE LEAP OF FAITH

Man faces the threat of living a self-centered life. At one time or another, we lived for ourselves: ME, MYSELF, AND I.

God's Word is Truth which gives us the understanding that God's Word protects us against the wiles of Satan if we allow The Truth of God's Word to control our lifestyle.

2.2 THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

The Breastplate protects our chest, right where our heart is. We may wonder why. Undoubtedly, Spiritual Sons must know why. God has impressed me for two main reasons (dear reader, you be the judge whether God had laid this upon my heart or not). First, according to Scripture, we should love God with all our hearts. God must be number one in our life. After that, we must emulate The High Priests of The Old Testament. They wore unique garments to cover the chest. Embroidered upon this garment were the twelve tribes of Israel, God's chosen nation. The High Priests, who loved the twelve tribes as one nation, represented the nation of Israel to God, continually interceding for the nation. Let me suggest that just as the nation of Israel included twelve tribes, yet one nation. Satan knows unity is strength; therefore, division in The Body of Christ has become Satan's priority, which hinders (weakens) and causes schisms. Satan, the Father of lies, knows the truth of the adage (proverb) UNITY IS STRENGTH AND THEREFORE DIVIDING THE CHURCH IS HIS ONGOING EFFORT,

Satan constantly aims his arrows of divisions toward our Breastplate of Righteousness, where we hold close to our hearts The Body of Christ. As the arrows penetrate, our love and concern for other members of The Body of Christ grow cold. Concentrating on their interpretations of Doctrine contrary to our interpretations Sad, we become judgmental toward our fellow Christian brothers. Instead of praying for them, we constantly criticize them. Always slow to reach out with a hand of reconciliation. Our persuasions always divide us; however, we must never forget that one of the hallmarks of a minister of The Gospel is to bring unity to The Body of Christ. No wonder one of the conditions of partaking in Holy Communion is that we correctly discern The Body of Christ (see 1 Corinthians 11)

Am I advocating (promoting) that The Body of Christ must unite, regardless of Doctrinal Persuasion? My answer is a big fat NO. Allow me the privilege of citing an example of how we allow different persuasions of doctrine to divide us, and yet there is evidence that though we often differ, we are One in The Lord. For several years, I listened to Pastor T D Jakes, a renowned speaker of our day. However, I stopped listening to him immediately when I heard he did not accept The Doctrine of The Trinity. Sometime later, I flicked on The Christian Broadcast Channel, and to my amazement, I heard Pastor T D Jakes preaching and praying in The Spirit. This proved to me that he was a faithful servant of God, with one distinction, he believed that Jesus was The Father, The Spiritual Son, and The Holy Spirit. He believed Jesus was a manifestation of The Father and The Holy Spirit. I accepted his ministry again, thought about his doctrinal persuasion for some time, and finally understood his persuasion. I still accept The Doctrine of The Trinity.

I concluded that Pastor Jakes based his interpretation on certain Scriptures:

“IF YOU HAVE SEEN ME, YOU HAVE SEEN THE FATHER.”

THE HOLY SPIRIT WAS SENT IN THE NAME OF THE SPIRITUAL SON: “THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST.”

My understanding of the two Scriptures differs from how Pastor Jakes interprets them. However, suppose Jesus has baptized him into The Holy Spirit as I have been baptized into The Holy Spirit, with the evidence of speaking in other tongues. Then, who am I not to accept him as my brother in The Lord and a fellow minister of The Gospel of Jesus Christ?

Recently I had another experience that told me the opposite. My wife and I received an invitation to an outreach service (The Church of Christ) and gladly attended. Initially, we were impressed with the preaching. Then the bomb dropped when the preacher categorically said that Jesus was not God. He was but a man. After the service, I was given a magazine confirming the preaching. I read the magazine carefully, noting they did not believe in The Trinity. I was not surprised. I noted that they did not accept The Baptism into The Holy Spirit. This convinced me not to have fellowship with them again. That which I held dear to my heart was

rejected. Some dear readers may challenge me (and they have the right to do so) with my so-called personal assumption.

What about denominations like the Presbyterians, the Methodists, etcetera.? Do I not have fellowship with them, for they do not accept The Baptism into The Holy Spirit? That is a powerful question, and yet there is a simple answer. I will have fellowship with them because they accept The Trinity, yet they have a different perception of The Baptism into The Spirit. They believe they received The Holy Spirit when Born-Again and The Baptism into The Holy Spirit ceased at the so-called Close of The Apostolic Age, and that which is Perfect Has Come (The Complete canon of Scripture). I cannot entirely agree with them; however, I can fellowship with them, for though they do not accept The Baptism, they accept the work of The Holy Spirit who convicts the sinner man of sin, judgment, and the righteousness of Christ. The other group I wrote of believes it is their Church Denomination that gives humankind entrance into Heaven. We know The Church does not provide access to Heaven. It is Jesus, the way, the truth, and the life, for there is no other name among men whereby we are saved.

2.3 SHOES FOR OUR FEET (THE GOSPEL OF PEACE)

I had the incredible privilege of being born in Woodstock, Cape Town, and, may I add, on the rough side of Cape Town. My cousin Emilio and I are best friends, and when young, we landed up in several fights defending each other. I was not involved in one fight, and it was one of the few fights Emilio lost. He lost because he was bare feet. He wore no shoes that day when fighting. He could not move, bob and weave, for he was tramping on stones and gravel. His concentration was on his sore feet and not on defending himself. No one can be physically effective when continually stomping on stones and gravel and facing a ferocious enemy.

The Shoes are for PROTECTION. The adage: "the best means of defense is attack." Can we imagine a soldier on the battlefield not wearing army boots? Instead of bobbing and weaving his body away from the enemy's thrusting of the sword, he would be hopping around, trying to avoid the stones, the gravel, and the thorns. What needs to be entrenched in our spirit is Satan, and his demons are already defeated. And therefore, our approach to our fellow man is a process far removed from warfare. WE COME IN PEACE. It is no wonder Apostle Paul speaks of the people of

God preaching peace with man and peace with God: “as shoes for your feet, having put on the readiness given by The Gospel of peace.” Our enemy is Satan and not those who are under his control. I mean the unsaved, those who have not accepted Jesus as their personal Saviour. It is these whom we march toward branding the weapons of warfare. However, it is not to harm them but to deliver them from the evil clutches of Satan and their sins that have them hell-bound. The message that we bring is a message of Peace and not Warfare.

EPHESIANS 6:15: AND, AS SHOES FOR YOUR FEET, HAVING PUT ON THE READINESS GIVEN BY THE GOSPEL OF PEACE.

Our warfare is expressed through the preaching of The Cross and The Resurrection of Jesus. The Gospel is an announcement of humanity's victory over Satan, Sin, and Death through Christ's Crucifixion and Resurrection. We preachers of The Gospel do not come to ensnare people; we come to deliver them. Our feet, sandaled with The Gospel of Peace, bring The Good News.

The battle is not waged against humanity. It is against Satan, and rest assured though we have weapons of warfare; however, they are spiritual weapons of peace. There is no need for one blow of offense. We preach The Gospel, which reminds Satan, his demonic horde, and agents that they are defeated.

Several years ago, many teachings, preaching and praying emphasized spiritual warfare. I found it strange for Born-Again Christians to assemble and have special services doing so-called spiritual warfare. All the demons were bound in the name of Jesus. People were talking to Satan. As young as I was in The Lord, I knew one does not attack Satan on our turf (area); we fight him on his turf and do not address him. We preach The Gospel.

In conclusion, let us bear in mind that the battle is The Lord's, and it has already taken place, and the good news is that Jesus won the war. Why, then, must we engage ourselves in a needless battle? All we need to do is preach The Gospel, for God's power delivers humankind from the clutches of Satan, Sin, and Death.

2.4 THE SHIELD OF FAITH

The Shield of Faith protects us against the straight arrows of Satan. As the arrows fly toward us, we raise the Shield of Faith close to our bodies, thus blocking the darts of despair, poverty, sickness, and rejection. The Shield of Faith is The God-given protective armament to overcome doubt and all other designed attacks.

The Bible mentions the Scripture, "THE JUST SHALL LIVE BY FAITH," four times. Once in The Old Testament (Habakkuk 2:4) and thrice in The New Testament (Romans 1:17: Galatians 3:11 and Hebrews 10:38).

The New Testament mentions "THE JUST SHALL LIVE BY FAITH" thrice is significant because it speaks of a Threefold Cord that cannot be broken (see Ecclesiastes 4:8-12). However, we must not repeat the mistake of The Faith Movement. This Movement promoted Faith to a level way beyond Scripture. This Movement introduced the Name It and Claimed It Formula. Faith is not expressed in Faith. Satan told Jesus to throw himself from the cliff (see Mathew 4).

The devil quoted Scripture. Jesus knowing the validity of The Scripture, did not succumb to the temptation. Why did Jesus not throw Himself from the cliff? The source of the quotation was Satan and not The Holy Spirit. Faith in Faith produces disappointment and despair. Faith expressed in The Word of God produces biblical action. Born-Again Believers must not be presumptuous in their Faith. We do not act on the letter of The Word but The Spirit of The Word.

Simply put, The Logos becomes alive when quickened by The Holy Spirit. First, however, we must discern who is quoting The Word. There are three voices in the spiritual world: the voice of The Holy Spirit, the voice of Man, and the voice of Satan. Satan's aim in quoting The Scripture is to mislead us; therefore, as Christians, we must learn to distinguish between The Logos (the written Word) and The Rhema (the spoken Word of God). Any person, even Satan, can quote The Word. However, only The Spirit of God (the author of The Word} can quicken The Word, thus making The Word a Spoken Word, a Rhema Word.

The Three-Fold Cord of Faith, which cannot be broken, has its expression in three spiritual entities, and that being:

THE WORD

THE BLOOD

THE POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

Our Faith is at its peak when we express Faith in the above Threefold Cord.

ROMANS 10:17: FAITH COMES FROM HEARING, AND HEARING THROUGH THE WORD OF CHRIST.

Our faith cleanses us when we express confidence in the efficacious blood of Jesus:

1 JOHN 1:9: IF WE CONFESS OUR SINS, HE IS FAITHFUL AND TO FORGIVE US OUR SINS AND TO CLEANSE US FROM ALL UNRIGHTEOUSNESS.

Praying in the Spirit also builds up our Faith:

JUDE 20: BUT YOU, BELOVED, BUILDING YOURSELVES UP IN YOUR MOST HOLY FAITH AND PRAYING IN THE HOLY SPIRIT,

SPIRITUAL APPLICATIONS

1

NOT ONE OF THE FIVE DEFENSIVE WEAPONS IS MORE IMPORTANT THAN THE OTHER. ON THE CONTRARY, EACH WEAPON COMPLEMENTS THE OTHER.

2

THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS DOES NOT ONLY PROTECT THE INDIVIDUAL, BUT IT ALSO SERVES TO PROTECT THE BODY OF CHRIST, WHICH WE CARRY IN OUR HEARTS (SPIRIT). WE ARE OUR BROTHER'S KEEPER. THEREFORE, IF MEMBERS OF THE BODY SUFFER, WE MUST PROTECT THEM.

READER'SNOTES

CHAPTER 9
SPIRITUAL ARMAMENT

PROTECTIVE ARMOR

THE HELMET OF SALVATION

EPHESIANS 6:13-18

THEREFORE, TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOR OF GOD THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY AND, HAVING DONE ALL, STAND FIRM. ¹⁴ STANDS, THEREFORE, HAVING FASTENED ON THE BELT OF TRUTH AND HAVING PUT ON THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, ¹⁵ AND, AS SHOES FOR YOUR FEET, HAVING PUT ON THE READINESS GIVEN BY THE GOSPEL OF PEACE. ¹⁶ IN ALL CIRCUMSTANCES TAKE UP THE SHIELD OF FAITH, WITH WHICH YOU CAN EXTINGUISH ALL THE FLAMING DARTS OF THE EVIL ONE; ¹⁷ AND TAKE THE HELMET OF SALVATION, AND THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD, ¹⁸ PRAYING AT ALL TIMES IN THE SPIRIT, WITH ALL PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION. TO THAT END, KEEP ALERT WITH ALL PERSEVERANCE, MAKING SUPPLICATION FOR ALL THE SAINTS.

THE HELMET OF SALVATION

I love wearing hats. I must admit I do not feel dressed unless I wear my hat when going out. The fact about wearing a hat is the last item of clothing we put on. Considering the spiritual armament made available to us, we follow the same pattern of putting on THE HELMET OF SALVATION. We put it on last. It does seem logical to do that. However, this should not be the chronological sequence when putting on our Spiritual Armor.

The Helmet of Salvation is the first of the spiritual Armament we should put on, for the mere fact that spiritual warfare usually begins in mind. Just as a helmet protects the head of the soldier in the same way, The

Helmet of Salvation protects the mind of The Born-Again Christian. Spiritual Warfare always begins in the mind. The reason, the mind is the seedbed of all our actions:

PROVERBS 23:7: FOR HE IS LIKE ONE WHO IS INWARDLY CALCULATING. "EAT AND DRINK!" So, HE SAYS TO YOU, BUT HIS HEART IS NOT WITH YOU.

Our thought life is crucial, for it leads to our actions. Satan and his agents are seasoned warriors. They have proven to themselves that the battle is won in the mind. Therefore, why worry about the whole man? Gaining control over the mind saves so much time and needless energy on their part. Many wise men of God have emphasized that the mind has always been the battleground between Satan and man. Thoughts, whether good or bad, always lead to action. So be it that Satan controls our minds. He directs our activities, which no doubt is terrible. However, our actions must always be Godlike if God controls our minds.

Our minds were corrupt in our unsaved state (not being Born-Again). However, when Born-Again, God, through His abundant Grace, gives us the spiritual means (the ability) to renew our minds:

EPHESIANS 4:23: AND BE RENEWED IN THE SPIRIT OF YOUR MINDS.

Using Strong's Greek Concordance number 365 for renewed, we discover the meaning of the Greek **ananeow**. It means to renovate and reform, which implies refurbishing and transforming (makeover). This had excellent insight into the condition of our minds when we were unsaved. Then, our minds were polluted, and to renew our minds means we must remove all the pollution. We must take out all that which is ungodly and refurbish our minds with that which is Godly. It is like renovating a home. Take out all that is old and worn and replace it with all that is good and new.

I have always preferred antique furnishers because of the dovetail joints, the secret dovetail joints, the mortise and tenet joints, the ball and claw legs, and French polishing. Our modern-day furnisher construction uses the dowel method: drill a hole and drive in a glued dowel with half-lap joints and screw and glue. No wonder modern-day furnisher does not last long, while furnisher built with the correct methods of joinery-built

centuries ago last for ages. The dear reader ponders how all that applies to our renewed minds. In our modern world, methods are adopted for renewing the mind away from Biblical standards. We are encouraged to employ the mind over matter method to better ourselves. We encourage belief in ourselves. We enable ourselves to look within ourselves, for there is greatness. No wonder we fail. There is only one way to renew man's mind, and that is God's way.

JEREMIAH 17:9: AS HE THINKETH IN HIS HEART, SO IS HE.

PROVERB 23:7: THE HEART IS DECEITFUL ABOVE ALL THINGS, AND DESPERATELY SICK; WHO CAN UNDERSTAND IT?

The Strong's Greek Concordance speaks of the heart as the inner man, the mind, and the will of man and that of the heart, and therefore we can say the mind of man is desperately wicked as well, not just the heart. Thus, the mind of man must be refurnished with the specific Threefold Cord of God's antiquity furnishing prepared for the mind and that being:

THE TABLE OF SHEWBREAD

THE GOLDEN LAMPSTAND

THE ALTAR OF INCENSE

The above furnishing was in The Holy Place of The Tabernacle of Moses. The Tabernacle in The Old Testament is where God dwelt amongst His people, the Jewish nation. The Old Testament Tabernacle is a picture of what The Born-Again Child of God is today. The Born-Again children of God are the modern-day Temple of God, The Habitation of the Spirit (see Corinthians 3:16; Ephesians 2:22).

There is a remarkable correlation (connection, relation, parallel) between the Tabernacle of Moses and The Temple of God (The Born-Again, CHILDREN OF GOD). Moses Tabernacle had three sections, The Outer Court, The Holy Place, and The Holy of Holies. Man, the modern-day Temple of The Most-High God, has A PHYSICAL BODY, A SOUL, AND A SPIRIT. The physical man contacts his fellow man and the environment they live in. The soul of man is the mind that houses his emotions, passions, will, and thoughts in life, the very seedbed of all his actions. The Spirit of God dwells in man's spirit, thus making man the Temple of God. Let me shock you, dear reader, though I have said there are three persons in One God and three parts to man. However, these three parts of man are not

one; they are separated yet with God's purpose of becoming ONE. Sin has divided ONENESS into three. The New Birth and our ongoing Sanctification is the process of God renewing us into One again. We become ONE like our God when Jesus returns for us. What you are about to read further shocks you, but do not be alarmed, for it blesses you. As Born-Again Christians sin in the flesh, sin is birthed in our mind (as we entertain the thought process), and we express the thought process in action through our physical frame. Let us assure ourselves that we cannot sin in the spirit, for within our spirit is where God dwells and where God is. There IS NO SIN. OUR SPIRIT IS ONE WITH GOD. Our physical frame is not ONE WITH GOD. No wonder THE WORD ENCOURAGES US TO WALK AFTER THE SPIRIT AND NOT AFTER THE FLESH:

God dwells, and where God is, there IS NO SIN. OUR SPIRIT IS ONE WITH GOD. Our physical frame is not ONE WITH GOD. No wonder THE WORD ENCOURAGES us TO WALK AFTER THE SPIRIT AND NOT AFTER THE FLESH:

ROMANS 8:1-5: THEREFORE, NOW NO CONDEMNATION FOR THOSE WHO ARE IN CHRIST JESUS. ² FOR THE LAW OF THE SPIRIT OF LIFE HAS SET YOU FREE IN CHRIST JESUS FROM THE LAW OF SIN AND DEATH. ³ FOR GOD HAS DONE WHAT THE LAW, WEAKENED BY THE FLESH, COULD NOT DO. Therefore, BY SENDING HIS SON IN THE LIKENESS OF SINFUL FLESH AND FOR SIN, HE CONDEMNED SIN IN THE FLESH SO that THE RIGHTEOUS REQUIREMENT OF THE LAW MIGHT BE FULFILLED IN US, WHO WALK NOT ACCORDING TO THE FLESH BUT ACCORDING TO THE SPIRIT. ⁵ FOR THOSE WHO LIVE ACCORDING TO THE FLESH SET THEIR MINDS ON THE THINGS OF THE FLESH. STILL, THOSE WHO LIVE ACCORDING TO THE SPIRIT SET THEIR MINDS ON THE THINGS OF THE SPIRIT.

ROMANS 8:13: IF YOU LIVE ACCORDING TO THE FLESH, YOU DIE, BUT IF BY THE SPIRIT YOU PUT TO DEATH THE DEEDS OF THE BODY, YOU SHALL LIVE.

What flooded our minds before our salvation, even up to this point? Sin and self-flooded our minds before redemption, lust, self-gratification, greed, hatred, retribution, vengeance, racism, idolatry, adultery, and so much more. Sin glutted our minds. We were hoarders of sin. There was no good in us (see Romans 7:18). All evil must receive an eviction order. Permanent new furnishings must enter, and that being which was in the tabernacles of Moses:

2 THE TABLE OF SHEWBREAD

The unsaved man though a spirit being is void of God. But, through the BornAgain experience, his spirit is quickened and made alive unto God (Ephesians 2:1:5; Colossians 2:13; Peter 3:18).

The remarkable truth of The Old Testament Tabernacle concerning The New Testament Tabernacle (The Born-Again Child of God) is the access to God. In the Old Testament, a man came to God through the outer court. This has changed significantly. God now comes to man and from The Holy of Holies. No more does man come to God. In times past, humankind searched for God. Now God comes to man. Now God searches for man. In times past, humanity had to offer God a sacrificed lamb to appease God's judgment. God offered up The Lamb of God unto Himself to declare humanity righteous (just as humanity had not sinned). In times past, humankind had to sacrifice a lamb year after year. **NOW GOD HAS OFFERED UP THE LAMB OF GOD ONCE AND FOR ALL.**

Another significant remarkable truth to understand is just how God comes to man. God's coming to man is a threefold process. First and foremost, God, our heavenly Father, presents humanity with gifts (John 3:16). Jesus, God's divine eternal gift of salvation, was sacrificed on The Cross of Calvary. The first process is entirely an act of God. The second process is man's acceptance of Jesus Christ as his personal Saviour. A second process is altogether an act of man's free will. However, though man accepted Christ, we must ask ourselves what led man to accept Christ. Understanding this helps us understand and appreciate the third process. The third process is vastly different from the first and second processes.

In the first process, God acted entirely on His own. In the second process, humankind worked of its own free will. However, though man's free will led him to accept Jesus as his personal Saviour, we cannot ignore that The Holy Spirit encouraged man's decision. The Scripture is clear that the Holy Spirit convicts man of sin, righteousness, and judgment (John 16:8), and therefore, the third process is nothing less than a collaboration between God, The Holy Spirit, and man. Furthermore, we must see the partnership of The Holy Spirit and The Born-Again Christian in the light of The Holy Scripture:

JOHN 7:38-39: WHOEVER BELIEVES IN ME, AS THE SCRIPTURE HAS SAID, 'OUT OF HIS HEART FLOWS RIVERS OF LIVING WATER.'" ³⁹ NOW THIS HE SAID ABOUT THE SPIRIT, WHOM THOSE WHO BELIEVED IN HIM WERE TO RECEIVE, FOR AS YET THE SPIRIT HAD NOT BEEN GIVEN BECAUSE JESUS WAS NOT YET GLORIFIED.

ACTS 1:8: BUT YOU RECEIVE POWER WHEN THE HOLY SPIRIT COMES UPON YOU, AND YOU ARE MY WITNESSES IN JERUSALEM AND ALL JUDEA AND SAMARIA, AND TO THE END OF THE EARTH.

The above two Scriptures emphatically authenticate this unique collaboration between The Holy Spirit and The Born-Again, Spirit-filled Christian. A river of conviction flows from the spirit of The Born Again, who is the certified conduit of truth. Through the preaching (Romans 10:14) and seeing (Acts 1:8) of The Born-Again Christians and the unction of The Holy Spirit, man is used by The Triune Godhead to bring the glorious Gospel of salvation and deliverance to his fellow man. As a Pentecostal, I am also of the persuasion that through Baptism into The Holy Spirit, God's divine power, will flow from the spirit of The Born-Again Christians (Corinthians 12,13,14). All this is now possible, for God has made His abode in The Born-Again Child of God. Therefore, praise God, no matter what the world says or what his demons and agents say, we, The Body of Christ, are The Temple of God. We are nothing less than The Holy of Holies.

Our Born-Again, Spirit-filled experience (John 3:1-6; Acts 1:8; 1 Corinthians Chapters 12,13,14) has empowered us to the extent that The Omnipotent, Omnipresent, Omniscient God flows from our inner man to our fellowman affecting his eternal state. Our Spirit-filled experience makes us preachers and witnesses of The Sinless Life, Efficacious Death, Resurrection, Ascension, and Second Coming of Jesus Christ. The Born-Again Child of God anointed the Holy Spirit from whom now flows a river of life from his inner man (John 7:37-39), making the now Born-Again Spirit-filled believer a bona fide (genuine, authentic) witness of Jesus. Humanity was once far removed from God because of sin but has become an emissary (ambassador, messenger) of God. We, the Born-Again Spirit-Filled believers, are the third process in man's salvation. This is clear as we consider the following Scripture:

ROMANS 10:14: HOW THEN WILL THEY CALL ON HIM IN WHOM THEY HAVE NOT BELIEVED? AND HOW ARE THEY TO BELIEVE IN HIM OF WHOM THEY HAVE NEVER HEARD? AND HOW ARE THEY TO HEAR WITHOUT SOMEONE PREACHING?

Through the anointing of The Holy Spirit, God has highly favored man. Once a prolific sinner, God now calls man to deliver God's creation from the evil clutches of Satan, his demons, and human agents. Once bound by evil, Humankind is now a threat to Satan and his evil kingdom.

Satan and his demonic horde are aware of the purpose of The Church, and therefore a concerted effort is designed and implemented against the advancement of The Church. Christian scholars and theologians believe Satan, his demonic horde, and worldly agents permeate the Body of Christ with false doctrines and persecution. Though these methods are detrimental (harmful) to the advancement of The Church, they are not the most effective.

Just what is the most effective attack against The Church? If it is not persecution and false doctrine? What is it? It is simply stopping the flow of the river of life (The Gospel of Regeneration) from the spirit of man:

JOHN 7:38: WHOEVER BELIEVES IN ME, AS THE SCRIPTURE HAS SAID, 'OUT OF HIS HEART FLOWS RIVERS OF LIVING WATER.'"

Take away from The Church the power and the move of The Holy Spirit; we are powerless and thus, like many other religions of our day. However, the Holy Spirit has come to glorify Jesus, and how does He carry out this? Through preaching, witnessing Jesus, signs, wonders, and our righteous living for God?

Jesus bore that horrible crown of thorns with honor and dignity. He knew what it entailed. He was aware of the mockery. The laughter and mocking of His persecutors could not in any way deplete the excellent purpose of the hurtful, painful crown of thorns embedded in His brow. As the blood flowed from the brow of Jesus, he secured the victory for humanity's renewed minds. His tears of pain mingled with the blood from The Crown of Thorns flowed from His brow and ran into the

ground, securing our victory over the powers of darkness (Ephesians 6:12) that constantly bombard our minds with filth.

THE FURNITURE WITHIN THE HOLY PLACE

Like The Tabernacle of Moses, I mentioned that we, The Church, are collectively and individually The Temple of God. The Old Testament Tabernacle of Moses was a type of The New Testament Temple, The Habitation of The Holy Spirit. Holy furnishings were placed strategically throughout the three sections of The Old Testament Tabernacle. The Brazen Altar (Exodus 27:1-8) was set in The Outer Court on the eastward side of The Tabernacle, typifying the sacrifice of Jesus Christ on The Cross of Calvary (John 1:29). The Laver Bowl (Exodus 30:17-21) was placed before The Holy Place almost midway between the eastward and western side of The Tabernacle, typifying the cleansing power of The Word of God (Ephesians 5:26). The Table of Showbread (Exodus 25:30) was placed on the northern side of The Holy Place, typifying Jesus Christ, The Bread of Life (Jn 6:35). The Golden Lampstand (Exodus 25:31) was placed on the south side of the Holy Place, typifying The Lord Jesus Christ and His Church as The Light of The World (John 8:12; Mt 5:14). The Altar of Incense (Exodus 30) set in the center of The Holy Place in front of the Veil that separated the Holy Place from The Holy of Holies. The Altar of Incense typifies prayer, intercession, and worship (Revelation 8). The Ark of the Covenant sat in the center of The Holy of Holies. The Veil between The Holy Place and The Holy of Holies also typified Christ. Once a year, the High Priest accessed The Holy of Holies through The Veil. In like manner, every Born-Again believer accesses The Divine presence of God through Christ. When Christ cried, "It is finished," The Veil of The Temple was rent from top to bottom, giving all men access to God that once was denied because of sin (see Hebrews 10:19-22).

The Tabernacle of Moses was most definitely a type of The Born-Again Child of God. The Old Testament saints had to enter by way of sacrifice. The Holy Place is unique because it portrays the mind of man, the very seat of his emotions. Yet, we do not understand the importance of the mind and how it relates to the expressions of the supernatural power of God. Therefore, the Bible places great emphasis on the mind:

JEREMIAH 17:9: THE HEART IS DECEITFUL ABOVE ALL THINGS, AND DESPERATELY WICKED: WHO CAN KNOW IT?

We must realize that The Word of God in the verses above refers to man's mind, where he thinks and meditates. It is not referring to the heart, the organ that pumps blood throughout the body. The Hebrew word "leb" speaks of the will, the intellect, and the mind (see 03280 and 3824 Strong's Hebrew Concordance).

The question that follows is how this all relates: The Holy Place furnishings and man's mind? Ralph W Harris, in his highly informative book Pictures of Truth, says the following:

AS THE OUTER COURT REVEALED THE WAY TO GOD, THE HOLY PLACE REPRESENTED SERVICE FOR GOD. THERE WERE THREE ITEMS IN THIS SECTION OF THE TABERNACLE. THE GOLDEN LAMPSTAND TAUGHT THE NEED FOR TESTIMONY; THE TABLE OF SHOWBREAD TYPIFIED SPIRITUAL NOURISHMENT AND FELLOWSHIP, AND THE GOLDEN ALTAR TYPIFIED WORSHIP AND INTERCESSION.

What strikes me indelibly are the words: "THE HOLY PLACE REPRESENTED SERVICE FOR GOD." What do these crucial words convey? They say the role of the mind, the soul of man. The mind of man is to be of service to God. Words are powerful, and we often miss their true meaning, taking them at face value. The Online Etymology Dictionary sheds much light on the word **service**:

IN THE YEAR 1100, SERVICE MEANT, "CELEBRATION OF PUBLIC WORSHIP, AN ACT OF HOMAGE; SERVITUDE; SERVICE AT THE TABLE; MASS, CHURCH CEREMONY, THE LATIN SERVATIUS "SLAVERY, CONDITION OF AN ENSLAVED PERSON, SERVITUDE, ALSO ENSLAVED PEOPLE COLLECTIVELY, FROM SERVUS "ENSLAVED PERSON

MEANING "ACT OF SERVING, OCCUPATION OF AN ATTENDANT SERVANT" IS ATTESTED FROM THE YEAR 1200, AS IS THAT "ASSISTANCE, HELP, A HELPFUL ACT. FROM THE YEAR 1300, AS "PROVISION OF FOOD; SEQUENCE OF DISHES SERVED IN A MEAL; FROM THE LATE 14 CENTURY, AS "SERVICE AT THE TABLE, ATTENDANCE DURING A MEAL." MEANING "THE FURNITURE OF THE TABLE" (TEAS SERVICE, ETC) IS FROM THE MID-15 CENTURY.

MEANINGS 'STATE OF BEING BOUND TO UNDERTAKE TASKS FOR SOMEONE OR AT SOMEONE'S DIRECTION; LABOUR PERFORMED OR UNDERTAKEN FOR ANOTHER" ARE MID-13 CENTURY. SENSE OF "SERVICE OR EMPLOYMENT IN A COURT OR ADMINISTRATION' IS FROM THE 13 CENTURY, AS THAT OF "MILITARY SERVICE (ESP. A KNIGHT); EMPLOYMENT AS A SOLDIER; HENCE "THE MILITARY AS AN OCCUPATION" (1706)

1893. "TO PROVIDE WITH SERVICE. ' FROM SERVICE, MEANING "PERFORM WORK ON, " FIRST RECORDED IN 1926. RELATED: SERVICEABILITY.

Considering the above, we can conclude that the mind (the soul) serves God. God employs reason. The mind as a servant must be engaged in worship, continually paying homage to God. The mind should be like a slave to God. We should never have a mind of our own. A faithful servant dies to his common sense and puts on the mind of Christ (1 Colossians 2:16). As servants of God, we always must realize that we enlisted in the army of God. We were sent to the forefront of the battle.

Minds that stay on God and His purposes shine as light because Jesus, The Light of the world, emanates (radiates) from us. But unfortunately, Satan and his evil horde are aware of the power of The Christian mind, and therefore he plays havoc with it. He bombards our mind (The Holy Place) with filth, bitterness, envy, malice, pride, jealousy, and so much more. No wonder The Word of God encourages us to renew our minds constantly (Ephesians 4:23).

We were unaware of the power of the mind and how it relates to the expression of God's power in our life and ministry. A dirty mind cuts off the power of God. Polluted minds produce contaminated action. But, on the other hand, minds fixed on God have manifold expressions of God's glory and strength. Therefore, as Born-Again, Spirit-filled Christians, we must spiritually develop our minds, and may I add, not just for our sakes only but more so for the sakes of those who need The Gospel message of reconciliation with God. Renewing our minds helps us to develop a Godlike Spirit that draws the unsaved to God.

Before we hold the unsaved in our hands, we must hold them up in our minds and spirits. And how do we do this? We pray for them.

SANCTIFICATION OF THE MIND PROCESS 1

We must feast on the Table of Showbread. Our minds must daily stay on The Word of God. Daily we must meditate on The Word of God. Reading the Word of God must be a part of our daily devotion. However, we must be careful not to make the same mistake the Jews made in the wilderness. God instructed them to only take enough manna for the day. However, they could take a double portion the day before the Sabbath, enough for Friday and Saturday. Many saw how there was enough for the two days and tried this throughout the week. Their plot to escape collecting the manna each day failed miserably, to their dismay and horror. Their double part turned into worms.

EXODUS 16:14-21: WHEN THE LAYER OF DEW EVAPORATED, BEHOLD, ON THE SURFACE OF THE WILDERNESS, THERE WAS A FINE FLAKE-LIKE THING, FINE AS THE FROST ON THE GROUND. ¹⁵ WHEN THE SPIRITUAL SONS OF ISRAEL SAW *IT*, THEY SAID TO ONE ANOTHER, "WHAT IS IT?" FOR THEY DID NOT KNOW WHAT IT WAS. AND MOSES SAID TO THEM, "IT IS THE BREAD WHICH THE LORD HAS GIVEN YOU TO EAT. ¹⁶ THIS IS ¹WHAT THE LORD HAS COMMANDED, 'GATHER OF IT EVERY MAN¹AS MUCH AS HE SHOULD EAT; YOU SHALL TAKE ^[E]AN OMER APIECE ACCORDING TO THE NUMBER OF SPIRITUAL SONS EACH OF YOU HAS IN HIS TENT.'" ¹⁷THE SPIRITUAL SONS OF ISRAEL DID SO, AND *SOME* GATHERED MUCH AND *SOME* LITTLE. ¹⁸ WHEN THEY MEASURED IT WITH AN OMER, HE WHO HAD GATHERED MUCH HAD NO EXCESS, AND HE WHO HAD GATHERED LITTLE HAD NO LACK; EVERY MAN GATHERED¹AS MUCH AS HE SHOULD EAT. ¹⁹ MOSES SAID TO THEM, "LET NO MAN LEAVE ANY OF IT UNTIL MORNING." ²⁰ BUT THEY DID NOT LISTEN TO MOSES, AND SOME LEFT PART OF IT UNTIL MORNING, AND IT BRED WORMS AND BECAME FOUL, AND MOSES WAS ANGRY WITH THEM. ²¹THEY GATHERED IT MORNING BY MORNING, EVERY MAN¹AS MUCH AS HE SHOULD EAT; BUT WHEN THE SUN GREW HOT, IT WOULD MELT.

The Table of Showbread, which rained from heaven, rained Sunday to Friday. It did not rain down on Saturday, The Jewish Sabbath day of rest. Throughout the forty years of wandering in the wilderness, they lived off the manna that rained from heaven. The Word of God is the

Christian's daily spiritual bread. We cannot skip one day, thinking yesterday's double portion sufficed for the next day.

Interestingly, the manna rained down early in the morning after the dew had gone up—a wonderful picture of how we should start our day. We should start our day by reading and meditating on God's Word. As Christians washed in the blood of The Lamb of God, let us not repeat the mistakes of the wandering Jews. They tried to get by collecting enough for several days. Every day we should have a new reading of God's Word. We must not try and get by with yesterday's reading. We must have fresh manna every morning to enrich us for the day ahead.

SANCTIFICATION OF THE MIND PROCESS 2

Secondly, we must let The Light of The Golden Lampstand shine brightly in our minds as in The Holy Place. We must realize that no natural light shone in The Holy Place. The only light that sparkled and shone brightly was The Golden Lampstand. The world and the standards thereof must in no way permeate our minds. That which should flood our minds is The Light of the glory of Jesus, the true Light of the world. It is interesting to note that The Golden Lampstand had seven lamps fueled by virgin oil:

EXODUS 27:20-21: “YOU SHALL COMMAND THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL THAT THEY BRING YOU PURE BEATEN OLIVE OIL FOR THE LIGHT, THAT A LAMP MAY REGULARLY BE SET UP TO BURN. ²¹ IN THE TENT OF MEETING, OUTSIDE THE VEIL BEFORE THE TESTIMONY, AARON AND HIS SONS SHALL TEND IT FROM EVENING TO MORNING BEFORE THE LORD. IT SHALL BE A STATUTE FOREVER TO BE OBSERVED THROUGHOUT THEIR GENERATIONS BY THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL.

The oil used for the Golden Lampstand has great spiritual significance. One of the many symbols of The Holy Spirit is oil. Myer Pearlman, a foundation member of The Assemblies of God Denomination, who is known for his prolific systematic theological writings, has this to say about the symbol of oil:

OIL IS PERHAPS THE MOST FAMILIAR AND COMMON SYMBOL OF THE HOLY SPIRIT. WHENEVER OIL WAS USED RITUALLY IN THE OLD TESTAMENT, IT SPOKE OF USEFULNESS, BEAUTY, LIFE, AND TRANSFORMATION. IT WAS COMMONLY USED FOR FOOD, LIGHT, LUBRICATION, HEALING, AND

SOOTHING OF THE SKIN. IN LIKE MANNER, IN THE SPIRITUAL ORDER, THE SPIRIT STRENGTHENS, ILLUMINES, LIBERATES, HEALS, AND SOOTHES THE SOUL.”

God was specific concerning the use of oil for the golden lampstand. It had to be pure, new oil. There was no contamination whatsoever in this oil.”

The Golden Lampstand was a type of The Lord Jesus Christ, The Light of the world. What is so vitally significant is the relationship between The Golden Lampstand, the type of Jesus and the Oil, the type of the Holy Spirit. In the Aeon of time, God determined that The Word of God becomes flesh. The Holy Spirit played a vital role in The Incarnation of The Word (Jn 1:1-4, 14). Mary, the virgin young lady, cried to the angel about the impossibility of bearing a child because she knew no man. The angel allayed her doubt and fear with these words:

LUKE 1:35: AND THE ANGEL ANSWERED HER, “THE HOLY SPIRIT WILL COME UPON YOU, AND THE POWER OF THE MOST HIGH OVERSHADOW YOU; THEREFORE, THE CHILD TO BE BORN WILL BE CALLED HOLY—THE SON OF GOD

Not only was Jesus born of The Spirit of God. The Holy Spirit also anointed His efficacious ministry.

MATHEW 3:16-17: AND WHEN JESUS WAS BAPTIZED, IMMEDIATELY HE WENT UP FROM THE WATER, AND BEHOLD, THE HEAVENS WERE OPENED TO HIM,^[A] AND HE SAW THE SPIRIT OF GOD DESCENDING LIKE A DOVE AND COMING TO REST ON HIM;¹⁷ AND BEHOLD, A VOICE FROM HEAVEN SAID, “THIS IS MY BELOVED SON,^[B] WITH WHOM I AM WELL PLEASED.”

ACTS 10:38: HOW GOD ANOINTED JESUS OF NAZARETH WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT AND POWER. HE WENT ABOUT DOING GOOD AND HEALING ALL WHO WERE OPPRESSED BY THE DEVIL, FOR GOD WAS WITH HIM.

ISAIAH 11:1-2: AND THERE SHALL COME FORTH A ROD OUT OF THE STUMP OF JESSE, AND A BRANCH SHALL GROW OUT OF HIS ROOTS: AND THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD SHALL REST UPON HIM, THE SPIRIT OF WISDOM AND

UNDERSTANDING, THE SPIRIT OF COUNSEL AND MIGHT, THE SPIRIT OF KNOWLEDGE AND THE FEAR OF THE LORD.

Just who is The Branch of Isaiah 11? It is none other than Jesus. The Above verse speaks volumes concerning The Golden Lampstand. It is not by chance that The Golden Lampstand was seven-branched. Considering what Isaiah declared, we note seven spirits and these being:

THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD

THE SPIRIT OF WISDOM,

THE SPIRIT OF UNDERSTANDING,

THE SPIRIT OF COUNSEL,

THE SPIRIT OF MIGHT,

THE SPIRIT OF KNOWLEDGE

THE SPIRIT OF THE FEAR OF THE LORD.

Jesus, our Lord and Saviour, was not only baptized in The River Jordan by John the Baptist, but He was also anointed with The Holy Spirit (Mathew 3:16,17; Acts 10:38) and thus received the sevenfold anointing of The Holy Spirit. Just as fuel generates light similarly, The Holy Spirit produced power in the ministry of Jesus Christ.

The Golden Lampstand, the type of Jesus anointed of The Holy Spirit. No wonder The Word of God encourages us to renew our minds (Romans 12:2). Our thought life must center on Christ, The Light of The World. Jesus, The Light of the world, also expects us to be the world's light (John 8:12; Mathew 5:14).

SANCTIFICATION OF THE MIND PROCESS 3 Much has been written about The Golden Lampstand and how it relates to the mind of The Born-Again. Yet, we must understand that no meditation of Jesus, The Light of The World, produces effective spiritual action unless The Holy Spirit fuels it. I have already said that I am Pentecostal, and like most Pentecostals, we

see an unbroken link between The Holy Spirit and The Word of God. However, the Word of God is adamant (unyielding) concerning this link:

EPHESIANS 6:17: AND TAKE THE HELMET OF SALVATION, AND THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD,

The Scripture is obvious, THE WORD OF GOD IS THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, and therefore it is vital that not only must the Born-Again Christian walk-in step with God, but we are also to realize just who sets the path before us. The Spirit of God leads us into all truth, and just what is truth? It is nothing else but the Word of God. No wonder John and Jude wrote of the unfailing ministry of The Holy Spirit:

JOHN 16:7-14: NEVERTHELESS, I TELL YOU THE TRUTH. IT IS TO YOUR ADVANTAGE THAT I GO AWAY, FOR IF I DO NOT GO AWAY, THE HELPER WILL NOT COME TO YOU, BUT IF I DEPART, I WILL SEND HIM TO YOU. "AND WHEN HE HAS COME, HE WILL CONVICT THE WORLD OF SIN, AND RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND JUDGMENT: "OF SIN, BECAUSE THEY DO NOT BELIEVE IN ME; "OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, BECAUSE I GO TO MY FATHER AND YOU SEE ME NO MORE; "OF JUDGMENT BECAUSE THE RULER OF THIS WORLD IS JUDGED. "I STILL HAVE MANY THINGS TO SAY TO YOU, BUT YOU CAN NOT BEAR THEM NOW. "HOWEVER, WHEN HE, THE SPIRIT OF TRUTH, HAS COME, HE WILL GUIDE YOU INTO ALL TRUTH; FOR HE WILL NOT SPEAK ON HIS AUTHORITY, BUT WHATEVER HE HEARS, HE WILL SPEAK; AND HE WILL TELL YOU THINGS TO COME. "HE WILL GLORIFY ME, FOR HE WILL TAKE OF WHAT IS MINE AND DECLARE IT TO YOU.

JUDE 20: BUT YOU, BELOVED, BUILDING YOURSELVES UP ON YOUR MOST HOLY FAITH, PRAYING IN THE HOLY SPIRIT.

For our minds to be spiritually productive, it is essential that we pray in The Holy Spirit (Romans 8:26). Praying in the Spirit must always precede the study and meditation of The Word. This principle of truth is evident even in creation. Reflecting on Genesis 1:1-3, we note that before God spoke creation into existence, The Holy Spirit moved over the face of the deep. Therefore, let us remember that The Word of God never acts

outside of The Holy Spirit and The Holy Spirit never works outside of The Word of God.

SANCTIFICATION OF THE MIND PROCESS 4

I have often heard men of God say that the mind of The Born-Again is a battleground. To this, I must concur. We must ask the question, why is the mind a fierce battleground? The answer is straightforward. Whoever controls the mind controls the person of the mind. Whoever controls the mindsets sets up residence in mind. We are aware of who is the author of that which is holy. We are aware of who is the author of evil. The all-wise God knew the frailty of man and placed the spiritual means to have an open, renewed mind within man's mind. Sadly, some of us battle in our minds because we do not use what God has placed in our minds entirely.

As previously said, there were three furnishings placed in The Holy Place. These being:

THE TABLE OF SHOWBREAD

THE GOLDEN LAMPSTAND

THE ALTAR OF INCENSE.

THE THREEFOLD CORD

The Table of Shewbread, The Candlestick, and The Altar of Incense. It is no surprise that God, in most cases, works in sets of three. We should ask ourselves just why. I trust my answer is acceptable. There is a Scripture in Ecclesiastes 4:8-12 that has a bearing on why:

THERE IS ONE ALONE, WITHOUT COMPANION: HE HAS NEITHER SON NOR BROTHER. YET THERE IS NO END TO ALL HIS LABOURS, NOR IS HIS EYE SATISFIED WITH RICHES. BUT HE NEVER ASKS, "FOR WHOM DO I TOIL AND DEPRIVE MYSELF OF GOOD?" THIS ALSO IS VANITY AND A GRAVE MISFORTUNE. TWO ARE BETTER THAN ONE BECAUSE THEY HAVE A GOOD REWARD FOR THEIR LABOUR. FOR IF THEY FALL, ONE WILL LIFT HIS COMPANION. BUT WOE TO HIM WHO IS ALONE WHEN HE FALLS, FOR HE HAS NO ONE TO HELP HIM UP. AGAIN, IF TWO LIE DOWN TOGETHER, THEY KEEP WARM: HOW CAN ONE BE WARM ALONE? THOUGH ANOTHER MAY

OVERPOWER ONE, TWO CAN WITHSTAND HIM. AND A THREEFOLD CORD IS NOT QUICKLY BROKEN.

Using the principle outlined in the above verse, we can say that although we feast from The Table of Showbread (The Word of God) and meditate extensively on The Golden Lampstand (Jesus, The Light of The World) yet there are those inevitable times when the setbacks of life torment our minds. As much as we try to get the better of the setbacks, they persist. Satan plagues our minds to the extent that, at times, we are robbed of our hope and faith in God. Over the years, I have developed a spiritual strategy that gives me victory over life's persisting problems. I use The Threefold Cord of feasting upon The Bread of Life and meditating on Christ Jesus, which leads me to Praise and Worship.

Satan is a formidable foe, and it is virtually impossible to overcome his evil attacks. We undoubtedly use The Word of God against him, just as Jesus had done in the wilderness. We concentrate on Jesus and His eternal power over Satan, yet to our dismay, Satan persists, and our minds are bombarded with filth and skepticism. At this point, we must employ the third spiritual truth hidden in The Altar of Incense. At The Altar of Incense, the priest offered up Incense to The Lord. Most Praise and Worship are often only seen as spiritual communion with God. Though that be true, we should also realize there is another side to Praise and Worship. Knowing this other side will most definitely help the Spiritual Son put to flight the enemy of our soul and mind.

As a young boy, I served as an altar server in The Catholic Church. I was always fascinated with incense in Catholic Mass. The Jewish Priest also, in their worship unto Jehovah King David, petitioned The Lord with these words:

PSALM 141:2: LET MY PRAYER BE COUNTED AS INCENSE BEFORE YOU AND THE LIFTING OF MY HANDS AS THE EVENING SACRIFICE.

Zechariah, the priest, burnt incense in the temple (Luke 1:9-10). Revelation 5:8; 8:3-4 speak of the prayers of the saints mingled with fragrance in the golden censer offered up at the golden altar.

As God's chosen people, many of us often need to remember just what prayer is. There are many definitions of prayer. However, I believe it is communion with God, yet there are many sides to this communion, such as Prayers of supplication, thanksgiving, intercession, worship, and praise. Doubtless, the priests used all these facets of prayer at The Altar of Incense. The reason for it is vitally important. First and foremost, God hears and answers our prayers, and God inhabits our worship and praise:

PSALM 22:3: LET MY PRAYER BE COUNTED AS INCENSE BEFORE YOU, AND THE LIFTING UP OF MY HANDS AS THE EVENING SACRIFICE!

The Hebrew word *yashab* for inhabiting has excellent spiritual depth. It means to sit down, to dwell, to remain. Though we feast on The Table of Showbread and meditate on Golden Lampstand, there is the possibility that our minds can wander and thus allow perverse and evil thoughts to flood our minds. Remember, I had said God works in sets of three: The Word, Christ, and Praise. When we praise God, He lives in our praises. He floods our minds with His presence. The wandering mind is now filled with God's presence; where God is, there can be no evil thoughts. How correct is the scripture that light and darkness do not mix (2 Corinthians 6:14)? The mind is spiritually productive when staying on The Word, Christ, and Praise.

THE MIND – (THE FLOWING STREAM OF LIVING WATER)

Between the Holy Place and The Holy of Holies was a gigantic veil of fine linen, blue, purple, and scarlet yarn. This veil divided The Holy Place from The Holy of Holies. This veil was significant because it spoke of the great divide between God and man. God, who is infinitely holy, could not have fellowship with humanity because man is sinful. This huge veil that separated man from God was rent from top to bottom when Jesus, our incredible Saviour, cried, "It is finished."

HEBREWS 10:19-20: THEREFORE, BROTHERS, SINCE WE HAVE THE CONFIDENCE TO ENTER THE HOLY PLACES BY THE BLOOD OF JESUS, ²⁰BY THE NEW AND LIVING WAY THAT HE OPENED FOR US THROUGH THE CURTAIN, THAT IS, THROUGH HIS FLESH.

The above verse clearly says that the veil speaks of the flesh of Jesus. From His very head to His feet, He shed His blood – Jesus, the way, truth, and life that has sealed our access to God.

Humanity, through Christ, has a new and living way to God. There is no more need for animal sacrifices. And yet, we must bear in mind that God has a unique and loving way of humanity because of Jesus. This is no doubt a bold statement and indeed requires a sound explanation. In the Old Testament, men came to God via animal sacrifice. The Old Testament High Priest represented man, who sprinkled the blood on the Mercy Seat on behalf of man. In the New Testament, God comes to man via the Sacrifice of Jesus, our Eternal High Priest. As Christians, we know that no more sacrifice for sin now remains. The sacrifice of Jesus was a once and for all sacrifice. In the Old Testament, humanity searched for God. In the New Testament, God searches for man. The Born-Again, Spirit-filled Christian plays a vital role in God's search for humankind.

As already said, The Born-Again Christian is the modern-day Temple Of God. From the Temple of God, the river of living water flows (John 7:38). Sometimes, the Born-Again children can restrict the flow of truth that flows from within. However, the Born-Again River of life can be seriously delayed and hindered. It may hit a wall of unbelief. A barricade of cursing and anger abuse toward The Gospel, this wall that man may sit up is nothing less than a dirty mind. As much as He wants to flow and touch others through us, the Spirit of God cannot move through us and beyond us, for we have set up a barricade. We must renew our minds for God to flow from us and through us to lost humanity. That which must always permeate our minds must only be The Word of God (The Table of Showbread), Christ (The Golden Lampstand), and Worship and Praise (The Altar of Incense)

The Crown of Thorns pressed crudely and deeply into the forehead of Jesus was the means made possible by God for the renewal of our minds. As Born-Again, Spirit-filled Christians, let us always realize that our minds play a vital role in God's plan for the salvation of our fellow man and, therefore, always, we must have our minds fixed on God. Our minds (The Holy Place) can either be a blessing to ourselves and others or else a hindrance to the work of God.

Rest assured, servants of God, that every Born-Again Spirit-filled child of God is The Holy of Holies. It is God's will on this day, and may I add, from the day of Pentecost (Acts 2), to flow from within us to a lost, degenerate world. Within us is a fountain of living water. Unbeknown to many Spirit-filled Christians, we are a reservoir of life. The life that The Holy Spirit wants to impart to lost humanity flows from you and me (see John 7:38-39). Unless fallen humanity drinks this living water, they end up in Hell for eternity. The only hope for the degenerate man to escape Hell and eternal damnation is you and I, the preachers of The Gospel of Jesus Christ), a fountain of living water. I said, and I repeat it because it is of utmost importance: In times past, humanity searched for God. God, in His bountiful mercy, gave them the means of Animal Sacrifice to approach Him via the ministry of The High Priest, yet they were far off, for only The High Priest entered the presence of God. All this has changed. Almighty God now searches for lost degenerate humanity. Like a river of Life, God flows from within our inner being toward lost society as we preach The Word of Life. Sadly, even as The Holy Spirit flows, He comes up against a high wall that stops His flowing from you and me. Our minds have become the barricade that prevents God from reaching lost humanity.

All Christians are witnesses of the redemptive sacrifice of Christ. The Roman soldiers forced the Crown of Thorns onto the head of Jesus. The bleeding Christ renewed our minds. The crown of thorns pierced His head. Blood flowed down His face. Christ's sinless mind paid the price for renewing our sinful minds. The barricade of sin is removed so God's love and mercy may flow from us to lost humanity.

The barricade needs not be in our minds anymore. Let us not make the blood of Jesus of non-effect; let our minds be stayed (settled) on Jesus, His holy life, His miracles, and His undying love for humanity. Let the River of Life from you and me to lost humanity.

SPIRITUAL APPLICATIONS

1

THE BORN-AGAIN, AS THE TABERNACLE OF GOD, IS GREATER THAN THE TABERNACLE OF MOSES.

The Spiritual Son must know that his experience in The Temple of God outweighs Moses's tabernacle. The Shekinah glory of God, like a pillar of cloud and a pillar of fire, hovered over the tabernacle. In the Spiritual

Sons' experience, the presence of God does not hover over the Spiritual Son but praises God the presence of God dwells within the Spiritual Son. There is no doubt a responsibility that the Spiritual Son must acknowledge and that with every unique blessing, there is great responsibility and accountability. It is the spiritual son's responsibility of the Spiritual Son to let the fire and pillar of cloud within him break forth so that those who do not know God may see the glory of his God flowing from him. His inner man must flow the river of life to a dry and thirsty world of humanity who do not know God through Jesus Christ.

2

THE HOLY PLACE-THE MIND OF THE BORN-AGAIN

The Ascended Gifted Father must help the Spiritual Son understand how God has arranged the furniture set in The Holy Place (the Mind of the redeemed). The first item is The Table of Shewbread, which the Spiritual Son is to feast on daily. The next item is The Golden Lampstand, a picture of Jesus, The Light of The World. The Spiritual Son must see the correlation of The Table of Shewbread to The Golden Lampstand, for as he feasts upon The Bread of Life (The Word of God), The Bread of Life reveals Jesus Christ as The Light of The World. Seeing the grandeur, the majesty of sinless Jesus, the Spiritual Son moves toward The Altar of Incense, where he offers up Worship and Prayer. His Prayer is twofold; Worship and that he, like his Saviour, may also become a Light to the World and pray for a lost and dying world to accept Jesus, The Bread of Life and The Light of The World.

3

RENEWED IN THE MIND

The Spiritual Son must know that whatever our MINDS set on, whether good or bad, eventually expresses physical action. The mind is the seedbed of our emotions which always finds expression. Thoughts lead to action.

4

CONTINUOUS ACCESS TO GOD

Separating the Holy Place from The Holy of Holies was A Veil. Only once a year could the High Priest enter the Holy of Holies. The Born-Again Child of God has access to God every moment of day and night; therefore, he should take full advantage of this incredible privilege.

CHAPTER 10

WEAPONS OF OFFENSE

THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, THE WORD OF GOD

EPHESIANS 6:13-18

OR OUR STRUGGLE IS NOT AGAINST FLESH AND BLOOD, BUT AGAINST THE RULERS, AGAINST THE POWERS, AGAINST THE WORLD FORCES OF THIS DARKNESS, AGAINST THE SPIRITUAL *FORCES* OF WICKEDNESS IN THE HEAVENLY PLACES. THEREFORE, TAKE UP THE WHOLE ARMOUR OF GOD THAT YOU MAY BE ABLE TO WITHSTAND IN THE EVIL DAY, AND HAVING DONE ALL, STAND FIRM. STAND THEREFORE, HAVING FASTENED ON THE BELT OF TRUTH, AND HAVING PUT ON THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND, AS SHOES FOR YOUR FEET, HAVING PUT ON THE READINESS GIVEN BY THE GOSPEL OF PEACE. IN ALL CIRCUMSTANCES, TAKE UP THE SHIELD OF FAITH, WITH WHICH YOU CAN EXTINGUISH ALL THE FLAMING DARTS OF THE EVIL ONE; AND TAKE THE HELMET OF SALVATION, AND THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD, PRAYING AT ALL TIMES IN THE SPIRIT, WITH ALL PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION. TO THAT END, KEEP ALERT WITH ALL PERSEVERANCE, MAKING SUPPLICATION FOR ALL THE SAINTS.

HEBREWS 4:12:

FOR THE WORD OF GOD IS QUICK, POWERFUL, AND SHARPER THAN ANY TWO-EDGED SWORD, PIERCING EVEN TO THE DIVIDING ASUNDER OF SOUL AND SPIRIT, AND THE JOINTS AND MARROW, AND IS A DISCERNER OF THE THOUGHTS AND INTENTS OF THE HEART

In my early years of serving The Lord, I often wondered why The Word of God is The Sword of The Holy Spirit. The strangeness of my wondering, I never asked my fellow Christians. I truly felt that The Lord wanted me to discover the truth. Sometimes it is good we allow The Lord

to reveal His truth to us personally. Too often want our questions answered by others, making us too dependent on others. Just as God illuminates His Word of Truth to the Ministers of The Gospel, we must realize that God is no respecter of Spiritual Sons, for He reveals His Truth to all His children who seek to know Truth.

God shared two precious truths of illumination through His Word that gave me a good reason to understand why The Word of God is The Sword of The Spirit.

ILLUMINATION 1

THE HOLY SPIRIT IS THE AUTHOR OF THE WORD

2 PETER 1:19-21: AND WE HAVE THE PROPHETIC WORD MORE FULLY CONFIRMED, TO WHICH YOU WILL DO WELL TO PAY ATTENTION AS TO A LAMP SHINING IN A DARK PLACE, UNTIL THE DAY DAWNS AND THE MORNING STAR RISES IN YOUR HEARTS, ²⁰ KNOWING THIS FIRST OF ALL, THAT NO PROPHECY OF SCRIPTURE COMES FROM SOMEONE'S OWN INTERPRETATION. ²¹ FOR NO PROPHECY WAS EVER PRODUCED BY THE WILL OF MAN, BUT MEN SPOKE FROM GOD AS THE HOLY SPIRIT CARRIED THEM ALONG.

David was not only a king and a psalmist (musician). He was also a Prophet of God. Inspired by the Holy Spirit, King David wrote seventy-three Psalms, just under fifty percent of the one hundred and fifty Psalms. He prophesied quickened by the Spirit of the lord:

2 SAMUEL 23:2: "THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD SPEAKS BY ME; HIS WORD IS ON MY TONGUE.

There were forty men of God whom the Holy Spirit inspired to record the Holy Scriptures. The relevant question follows: Were all inspired? Apostle Peter uses the words "moved by the spirit," which in Greek means led of the spirit or spoke from God. Apostle Paul, a Foundational Apostle, confirms that though God used men to record the Holy Scripture, the Holy Spirit inspired them. What stands out in the following scripture are two words: all scripture:

2 TIMOTHY 3:16-17: GOD INSPIRES ALL SCRIPTURE AND IS PROFITABLE FOR TEACHING, FOR REPROOF, FOR CORRECTION, FOR TRAINING IN RIGHTEOUSNESS; ¹⁷ SO THAT THE MAN OF GOD MAY BE ADEQUATE, EQUIPPED FOR EVERY GOOD WORK.

ILLUMINATION 2:

THE HOLY SPIRIT CONCEIVED JESUS:

ISAIAH 7:14 NASB: ¹⁴ THEREFORE, THE LORD HIMSELF WILL GIVE YOU A SIGN: BEHOLD, A VIRGIN WILL BE WITH CHILD AND BEAR A SON, AND SHE WILL CALL HIS NAME IMMANUEL.

LUKE 1:26-35: IN THE SIXTH MONTH, THE ANGEL GABRIEL WAS SENT FROM GOD TO A CITY OF GALILEE NAMED NAZARETH, ²⁷ TO A VIRGIN BETROTHED TO A MAN WHOSE NAME WAS JOSEPH, OF THE HOUSE OF DAVID. AND THE VIRGIN'S NAME WAS MARY. ²⁸ AND HE CAME TO HER AND SAID, "GREETINGS, O FAVORED ONE, THE LORD IS WITH YOU!"²⁹ BUT SHE WAS GREATLY TROUBLED AT THE SAYING AND TRIED TO DISCERN WHAT SORT OF GREETING THIS MIGHT BE. ³⁰ AND THE ANGEL SAID TO HER, "DO NOT BE AFRAID, MARY, FOR YOU HAVE FOUND FAVOR WITH GOD. ³¹ AND BEHOLD, YOU WILL CONCEIVE IN YOUR WOMB AND BEAR A SON, AND YOU SHALL CALL HIS NAME JESUS. ³² HE WILL BE GREAT AND WILL BE CALLED THE SON OF THE MOST HIGH. AND THE LORD GOD WILL GIVE HIM THE THRONE OF HIS FATHER DAVID, ³³ AND HE WILL REIGN OVER THE HOUSE OF JACOB FOREVER, AND OF HIS KINGDOM THERE WILL BE NO END."³⁴ AND MARY SAID TO THE ANGEL, "HOW WILL THIS BE SINCE I AM A VIRGIN?" ³⁵ AND THE ANGEL ANSWERED HER, "THE HOLY SPIRIT WILL COME UPON YOU, AND THE POWER OF THE MOST HIGH WILL OVERSHADOW YOU; THEREFORE, THE CHILD TO BE BORN WILL BE CALLED HOLY—THE SON OF GOD.

MATHEW 4:1-11 KJV: THEN WAS JESUS LED UP OF THE SPIRIT INTO THE WILDERNESS TO BE TEMPTED OF THE DEVIL.² AND WHEN HE HAD FASTED FORTY DAYS, AND FORTY NIGHTS, HE WAS AFTERWARD HUNGERED.³ AND WHEN THE TEMPTER CAME TO HIM, HE SAID, IF THOU BE THE SON OF GOD, COMMAND THAT THESE STONES BE MADE BREAD.⁴ BUT HE ANSWERED AND SAID, IT IS WRITTEN, MAN SHALL NOT LIVE BY BREAD ALONE, BUT BY EVERY

WORD THAT PROCEEDETH OUT OF THE MOUTH OF GOD.⁵ THEN THE DEVIL TAKETH HIM UP INTO THE HOLY CITY, AND SETTETH HIM ON A PINNACLE OF THE TEMPLE,⁶ AND SAITH UNTO HIM, IF THOU BE THE SON OF GOD, CAST THYSELF DOWN: FOR IT IS WRITTEN, HE SHALL GIVE HIS ANGELS CHARGE CONCERNING THEE: AND IN THEIR HANDS THEY SHALL BEAR THEE UP, LEST AT ANY TIME THOU DASH THY FOOT AGAINST A STONE.⁷ JESUS SAID UNTO HIM, IT IS WRITTEN AGAIN, THOU SHALT NOT TEMPT THE LORD THY GOD.⁸ AGAIN, THE DEVIL TAKETH HIM UP INTO AN EXCEEDING HIGH MOUNTAIN, AND SHEWETH HIM ALL THE KINGDOMS OF THE WORLD, AND THE GLORY OF THEM;⁹ AND SAITH UNTO HIM, ALL THESE THINGS WILL I GIVE THEE IF THOU WILT FALL AND WORSHIP ME.¹⁰ THEN SAITH JESUS UNTO HIM, GET THEE HENCE, SATAN: FOR IT IS WRITTEN, THOU SHALT WORSHIP THE LORD THY GOD, AND HIM ONLY SHALT THOU SERVE.¹¹ THEN THE DEVIL LEAVETH HIM, AND, BEHOLD, ANGELS CAME AND MINISTERED UNTO HIM.

Satan's three temptations all precede with " if you are the Spiritual Son of God"? Was Satan sowing doubt? I have always said IF is a small ambiguous (vague and confusing) word. Jesus did not doubt who He was, for Jesus heard the audible voice of His Father saying: "THIS IS MY SON IN WHOM I AM WELL PLEASED." God, His Father, spoke audibly at His Baptismal and inauguration of His threefold cord of ministry, Prophet, Priest, and King. The cunning use of the word IF was for Jesus to use His God's anointing power for Self-Gratification, Presumption, and Possessions

TEMPTATION 1: SELF-GRATIFICATION

Jesus fasted for forty days and forty nights. He was weak; however, his spirit was strong. Turning the stones into bread was a temptation of self-indulgence. Instead, Jesus whirled the Sword of the Spirit: "Man shall not live by bread alone but by every word that comes from the mouth of God." Jesus knew that his God-given anointing was to perform miracles for the betterment of humanity and not for himself. No wonder Jesus said: "I am the bread of life."

TEMPTATION 2: PRESUMPTION

Jesus did not succumb to the temptation of throwing himself from the pinnacle of the temple and trusting the angels to save him for two spiritual reasons. The first reason Jesus quotes the word is that no man must test God. The second reason is that the person quoting the Word was not a servant or an angel of the Lord. Although Satan quoted the Word, the Holy Spirit did not energize the Word. In simple terms, it was not a Rhema Word.

TEMPTATION 3: POSSESSIONS:

Satan offered Jesus all kingdoms of the world and its glory. All Jesus had to do but worship Satan. I have always seen this temptation as the height of foolishness. Satan was offering to Jesus that which already belonged to Jesus. Kingdoms of the world and its glory. All Jesus had to do but worship Satan. Like I said, I have always seen this temptation as the height of foolishness. Satan was Offering to Jesus that which already belonged to Jesus:

PSALM 50:10: FOR EVERY BEAST OF THE FOREST IS MINE,
THE CATTLE ON A THOUSAND HILLS.

HAGGAI 2:8: THE SILVER IS MINE, AND THE GOLD IS MINE, DECLARES THE
LORD OF HOSTS.

THE SPIRITUAL SON USING THE SWORD

Jesus conquered Satan using The Written Word (The Sword of The Spirit), which illustrates how all Christians should face and conquer temptation: "IT IS WRITTEN."

Before the Spiritual Father teaches the Spiritual Son how to use the Sword in spiritual warfare against our common enemies, he must Instruct the Spiritual Son on the relationship between The Holy Spirit and The Word of God.

It is The Spirit of God whose work precedes the work of The Word of God. The Genesis Creation narrative of Genesis One is a classic example of this. The earth was formless, and void and darkness were upon the face of the deep. The Spirit of God moved over, which was formless and void, over the darkness and the deep surface. The Spirit of God prepared all that The Word would bring into existence.

GENESIS 1:1-3: IN THE BEGINNING, GOD CREATED THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH. ²THE EARTH WAS WITHOUT FORM, VOID AND DARKNESS WAS OVER THE FACE OF THE DEEP. AND THE SPIRIT OF GOD WAS HOVERING OVER THE FACE OF THE WATERS. ³ AND GOD SAID, "LET THERE BE LIGHT," AND THERE WAS LIGHT.

Considering the creation of humankind, God formed Adam from the dust of the ground. However, life only came into Adam after God inbreathed him. Using the work of the Spirit of God in the creation of heaven, earth, and Adam, it is clear though The Word Created all things (see John 1:1-4). However, there was a preparation of what was to come into existence by the power of The Spirit.

From an exceedingly early age, I loved reading. I read all genres of novels and books. One of my favorite authors is James A Michener. I enjoyed the work of James Michener, but sadly I never knew him personally. Besides not knowing him personally, I could not contact him if I never understood specific chapters. Like all Born-Again Spirit-Filled Christians, we enjoy and love The Bible and praise God we know and have a relationship with the author of The Bible -THE HOLY SPIRIT. And therefore, we have a meaningful relationship with The Spirit. A relationship in the sense that when we do not understand what we are reading and studying, we can ask The Holy Spirit to illuminate our understanding:

JOHN 14:26: BUT THE HELPER, THE HOLY SPIRIT, WHOM THE FATHER WILL SEND IN MY NAME, HE WILL TEACH YOU ALL THINGS AND BRING TO YOUR REMEMBRANCE ALL THAT I HAVE SAID TO YOU.

JOHN 16:5-14: " BUT NOW I AM GOING TO HIM WHO SENT ME, AND NONE OF YOU ASKS ME, 'WHERE ARE YOU GOING?' ⁶ BUT I HAVE SAID THESE THINGS TO YOU, SORROW HAS FILLED YOUR HEART. ⁷ NEVERTHELESS, I TELL YOU THE TRUTH: IT IS TO YOUR ADVANTAGE THAT I GO AWAY, FOR IF I DO NOT GO AWAY, THE HELPER WILL NOT COME TO YOU. BUT IF I GO, I WILL SEND HIM TO YOU. ⁸ AND WHEN HE COMES, HE WILL CONVICT THE WORLD CONCERNING SIN AND RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT: ⁹ CONCERNING SIN, BECAUSE THEY DO NOT BELIEVE IN ME; ¹⁰ CONCERNING

RIGHTEOUSNESS, BECAUSE I GO TO THE FATHER, AND YOU WILL SEE ME NO LONGER; ¹¹ CONCERNING JUDGMENTS BECAUSE THE RULER OF THIS WORLD IS JUDGED. ¹² "I STILL HAVE MANY THINGS TO SAY TO YOU, BUT YOU CAN NOT BEAR THEM NOW. ¹³ WHEN THE SPIRIT OF TRUTH COMES, HE WILL GUIDE YOU INTO ALL THE TRUTH, FOR HE WILL NOT SPEAK ON HIS AUTHORITY, BUT WHATEVER HE HEARS HE WILL SPEAK, AND HE WILL DECLARE TO YOU THE THINGS THAT ARE TO COME. ¹⁴ HE WILL GLORIFY ME, FOR HE WILL TAKE WHAT IS MINE And DECLARE IT WITH YOU.

The Spiritual Father must encourage his Spiritual Son to have a meaningful relationship with The Holy Spirit. The Spiritual Son must glean from the creation narrative how the Spirit of God first moved over the face of the deep before the Word spoke the creation into existence. Before the Spiritual Son reads and studies The Word, he must Praise and Worship. The Spiritual Father must teach the Spiritual Son that we live in a wicked world that affects us. The standards of the world rub off onto us. We sin consciously and unconsciously. Our darkened spiritual understanding affected by the depraved lifestyle of the world does not change unless we spend reasonable devotional times in the presence of The Lord. Prayer, worship, reading, and studying The Word must be a definitive part of our devotional time. Further reading and reviewing The Word outside the help of The Holy Spirit leads to confusion and misinterpretation. The ultimate lesson of having a relationship with The Holy Spirit is that we cannot understand The Word without knowing and communicating with The Holy Spirit, the author of The Word of God. The Spiritual Son must see The Sword as his ally (helper, friend, partner, and supporter). No Christian should ever confront Satan and temptation on his own. He must call for help, and his helper will aid him in his hour of temptation. He must call on his friend, for he has a friend that sticks closer than a brother. The Spiritual Son must call upon his partner and his supporter, who will aid him wholeheartedly in gaining victory in spiritual warfare.

THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT PRODUCES FAITH

Engaging in Spiritual warfare without Faith is a futile exercise. And that is why the Spiritual Son must become an ardent (fervent, passionate) reader of The Word of God, which produces Faith:

ROMANS 10:17: FAITH COMES FROM HEARING, AND HEARING THROUGH THE WORD OF CHRIST.

The Spiritual Son must first be able to use The Word of God against the habitual sins that plagued him while unsaved because Satan tries to awaken those sins and pleasures again in the Spiritual Son. Therefore, God for a line of action against the enemy's wiles that Satan and his evil forces bring against the Spiritual Son.

As previously mentioned, there are only two offensive weapons in the armory of the Born-Again Spirit-Filled Christian. These are The Sword of The Spirit, The Word of God. These two offensive weapons are enough to conquer our common enemy, Satan.

JOHN 16: 12-15: "I STILL HAVE MANY THINGS TO SAY TO YOU, BUT YOU CAN NOT BEAR THEM NOW. ¹³WHEN THE SPIRIT OF TRUTH COMES, HE WILL GUIDE YOU INTO ALL THE TRUTH, FOR HE WILL NOT SPEAK ON HIS AUTHORITY, BUT WHATEVER HE HEARS HE WILL SPEAK, AND HE WILL DECLARE TO YOU THE THINGS THAT ARE TO COME. ¹⁴HE WILL GLORIFY ME, FOR HE WILL TAKE WHAT IS MINE AND DECLARE IT TO YOU. ¹⁵ALL THE FATHER HAS IS MINE; THEREFORE, I SAID HE WILL TAKE WHAT MINE AND DECLARE IT TO YOU.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:12-13: NOW WE HAVE RECEIVED NOT THE SPIRIT OF THE WORLD, BUT THE SPIRIT WHO IS FROM GOD, THAT WE MIGHT UNDERSTAND THE THINGS FREELY GIVEN US BY GOD. ¹³AND WE IMPART THIS IN WORDS NOT TAUGHT BY HUMAN WISDOM BUT TAUGHT BY THE SPIRIT, INTERPRETING SPIRITUAL TRUTHS TO THOSE WHO ARE SPIRITUAL.

GALATIANS 1:12: FOR I DID NOT RECEIVE IT FROM ANY MAN, NOR WAS I TAUGHT IT, BUT I RECEIVED IT THROUGH A REVELATION OF JESUS CHRIST.

PETER 1:20-21: KNOWING THIS FIRST OF ALL, THAT NO PROPHECY OF SCRIPTURE COMES FROM SOMEONE'S OWN INTERPRETATION. ²¹FOR NO PROPHECY WAS EVER PRODUCED BY THE WILL OF MAN, BUT MEN SPOKE FROM GOD AS THE SPIRIT MOVED THEM.

CHAPTER 11
WEAPONS OF OFFENSE

PRAYING ALWAYS WITH ALL PRAYER
EPHESIANS 6:13-18

STAND THEREFORE, HAVING GIRDED YOUR WAIST WITH TRUTH, HAVING PUT ON THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS, ¹⁵ AND HAVING SHOD YOUR FEET WITH THE PREPARATION OF THE GOSPEL OF PEACE; ¹⁶ ABOVE ALL, TAKING THE SHIELD OF FAITH WITH WHICH, YOU WILL BE ABLE TO QUENCH ALL THE FIERY DARTS OF THE WICKED ONE. ¹⁷ AND TAKE THE HELMET OF SALVATION, AND THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT, WHICH IS THE WORD OF GOD; ¹⁸ PRAYING ALWAYS WITH ALL PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION IN THE SPIRIT, BEING WATCHFUL TO THIS END WITH ALL PERSEVERANCE AND SUPPLICATION FOR ALL THE SAINTS.

THE LIFELINE OF ALL BORN-AGAIN, SPIRIT-FILLED CHRISTIANS

Prayers is the spiritual lifeline of Christians; therefore, the Spiritual Father must emphasize the importance of Prayer to the Spiritual Son. The Father must underscore (highlight, stress) the significance and necessity (need, obligation, essential) for daily communion with God through ardent (passionate, fervent) prayer. The Spiritual Father must teach the Spiritual Son the various types of Prayer so that the Spiritual Son may have a well-rounded command of Prayer.

Most theologians and scholars see only six weapons of Spiritual Warfare, however. Yet, on close examination, there are eight:

THE BELT OF TRUTH

THE BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

FEET SHOD WITH THE GOSPEL OF PEACE

THE SHIELD OF FAITH

THE HELMET OF SALVATION

THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT

ALL (TYPES) OF PRAYER

PRAYING IN THE SPIRIT

DEFINING PRAYER

Prayer is not a monologue. The Man speaks, and God answers. And may I add in various ways. Many Christians fail in their Prayer life because they do not allow God to talk to them. It has always been my belief:

“PRAYER IS INCOMPLETE UNLESS WE HAVE HEARD FROM GOD.”

PRAYER

REVEALS

ALMIGHTY

YESHUA (JESUS)

ETERNAL

RIGHTEOUSNESS

My dear wife (Dolores) believes wholeheartedly that God usually answers in three distinct ways:

GOD SAYS NO

GOD SAYS YES

GOD SAYS WAIT

No doubt, many of us have experienced those three above answers. However, does God, at times, speak to us? I do believe that God speaks to us constantly. God speaks through His written Word and The Holy Spirit, yet there are those rare occasions we hear the voice of God. I have listened to a few experiences of God's still voice speaking to me. And yet there were many times when God spoke when pouring out my spirit in

troubled times. However, not audibly, His Peace flooded my inner being, and I knew God had answered my prayer uniquely. Being a Pentecostal minister, the Holy Spirit has spoken to me several times through the Gift of Prophecy. With great emphasis, a few of God's servants told me I would travel preaching The Gospel. And praise God, it happened.

Via the Holy Spirit's power, Spiritual Fathers must convince their Spiritual Sons that the spiritual lifeblood of the Spiritual Son is their link to God through Prayer. FURTHERMORE, IT IS A VERTICAL RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD THAT DETERMINES OUR HORIZONTAL RELATIONSHIP WITH OUR FELLOW MAN.

2. ALL TYPES OF PRAYER

Apostle Paul under the direction of The Spirit, speaks of ALL PRAYER and PRAYING IN THE SPIRIT, which gives us the spiritual understanding that there are various types of Prayer. Knowing the kinds of Prayer gives us a sense of what kind of Prayer to pray when specific circumstances arise.

THE MODEL PRAYER (THE LORD'S PRAYER)

PRAYER OF AGREEMENT

PRAYER OF FAITH

PRAYER OF INTERCESSION

PRAYER OF PRAISE

PRAYER OF THANKSGIVING

PRAYER OF SUPPLICATION

PRAYING IN THE SPIRIT

PRAYER OF WORSHIP

3.1 THE MODEL PRAYER (THE LORD'S PRAYER)

The pattern (outline) of The Lord's Prayer teaches the chronological aspect of how we should approach God through prayer. Therefore, for the Spiritual Son to make full use of what God offers him to enhance his prayer life, the Father must show the Spiritual Son the importance of the chronological sequence of The Lord's Prayer and the vital distinction between the other formats of Prayer:

MATHEW 6:9-13: “OUR FATHER IN HEAVEN, HALLOWED BE YOUR NAME. ¹⁰
YOUR KINGDOM COME YOUR WILL BE DONE, ON EARTH AS IT IS IN HEAVEN
¹¹GIVE US THIS DAY OUR DAILY BREAD,¹² AND FORGIVE US OUR DEBTS, AS
WE ALSO HAVE FORGIVEN OUR DEBTORS. ¹³ AND LEAD US NOT INTO
TEMPTATION BUT DELIVER US FROM EVIL.

THE CHRONOLOGICAL SEQUENCE OF THE LORD’S PRAYER:

SEGMENT 1: OUR FATHER

SEGMENT 2: WHO ART IN HEAVEN

SEGMENT 3: HALLOWED BE THY NAME

SEGMENT 4: THY KINGDOM COME; THY WILL BE DONE

ON EARTH AS IT IS IN HEAVEN

SEGMENT 5: GIVE US OUR DAILY BREAD

SEGMENT 6: AND LEAD US NOT INTO TEMPTATION BUT DELIVER US FROM
EVIL

SEGMENT 7: FOR THINE IS THE KINGDOM, THE POWER, AND THE GLORY
FOREVER AMEN.

SEGMENT 1 OF THE LORD’S PRAYER: OUR FATHER

God is the creator of all things, and many respect God for that. However, it is not God’s will that humankind sees God only as The Creator of all things. God, through The Holy Scripture, reveals himself as man’s Father. Like God, we know of Him as our Creator. God, our Creator, who alone is OMNIPOTENT, OMNISCIENT, and OMNIPRESENT, but as Father, we must learn to know Him. Fatherhood speaks of a relationship. God though the Creator of all things, has a paternal side to Him. God cares for man. He is concerned for man to the extent that He has a means of reconciliation between Himself and man and that through the atoning death of Jesus, God’s only begotten Son. Because God is our Father, he upholds The Threefold Cord of parenting: PROTECTION, PROVISION, and PROMOTION.

SEGMENT 2 OF THE LORD’S PRAYER: WHO ART IN HEAVEN

Though God is omnipresent, the second segment of The Lord’s Prayer speaks of God’s abode (dwelling). His throne is in Heaven. However, His presence is everywhere. Although the Word describes Heaven, it does not give us its situation. Some scholars say that God dwells in The Third Heaven. To my mind, the third heaven is beyond the manifold galaxies that God had created, and today, man is still discovering these galaxies.

So be it that these galaxies are light-years away, and God's throne is way above His creation. How many light years is the throne of God away from us? The amazing fact is that, though light-years away, God as our Father is only a prayer away. A cry to God, a sigh to God, a groan to God, a tear, or a word of praise and worship brings the very presence of God to our immediate presence. How is this so possible? The answer is so wonderfully possible for God, for God is not just our God who rules over the affairs of men. God is our Father, who loves and cares for us, for we are the apple of God's eye.

Elvis Presley sang one of my favorite songs: Home is where the heart is, and my heart is anywhere you are. But how correct are those words when we relate our spiritual experience with Jesus?

God's Word says: We are seated in heavenly places with Christ (Ephesians 2:6), who sits on the right side of God (Ephesians 1:20). Sadly, many of us believe we should wait for death or the Rapture to be with God in heaven. Physically we are on earth. However, The Word does say we are seated with Christ in heavenly places. The book of Ephesians records more than twenty occasions, the phrase "in Christ."

Furthermore, The Holy Scriptures speak of the earth being the footstool of Jesus (see Acts 7:49), which means whatever is taking place on earth is under His control, and by that, I mean both the negative and the positive. And therefore, all things work for our good (Romans 8:28).

No wonder The Holy Scriptures make the concerted effort to convince us of this great truth by referring to us as Ambassadors (see 2 Corinthians 5:20). We are Ambassadors from Heaven representing God in this world, bringing a message of hope and reconciliation to a lost human race.

SEGMENT 3 OF THE LORD'S PRAYER: HALLOWED BE THY NAME

Our approach to God, our heavenly Father God, is via hallowing His name. To hallow, God's name means:

TO MAKE HIS NAME SACRED, TO CONSECRATE HIS NAME

TO SANCTIFY HIS NAME TO BLESS HIS NAME

TO MAKE HIS NAME HOLY TO DEIFY HIS NAME

God has several names, such as LORD (Jehovah), Lord (Adonai), Elohim (God), and many more. All the names above and the many others prescribed to God are sacred and what is so significant about The Lord's Prayer is the spiritual fact that Father is also one of God's names, which is why we exalt his name as Father.

I am of the persuasion that all the various names of God are descriptive of His Person (by that, I mean His personality and character). However, although God wants us to know him through all those names, the name that pleases, honors, and best describes God the most is FATHER. Why do I say this? Am I presumptuous? Am I speaking for God? My answer is simple; Father denotes A RELATIONSHIP, God being the head of a family and you and I as Spiritual Sons and daughters of His family. God is our Father, and we learn of God through us being his Spiritual Sons and daughters. We discover His personality and character through our relationship as Spiritual Sons and daughters of God. Knowing God through the various names brings about a knowledge of God. However, to have a firm and good understanding of who God is, we must have a relationship with the Lord. God, as we discovered, has His dwelling place in Heaven. We, while on earth, never ascend to God's dwelling place (i.e., in the flesh), and therefore we cannot honestly know God, but wait, God as our Father comes from His throne and dwells with us through the wondrous miracle of The Born-Again experience. Therefore, We can know God as our Creator and Heavenly Father as He reveals Himself.

SEGMENT 4 OF THE LORD'S PRAYER: THY KINGDOM COME, AND THY WILL BE DONE IN EARTH AS IT IS IN HEAVEN:

God, the creator of all things, is the ruler of all things. However, with a third of the angelic host, Satan rebelled against God and was cast out of Heaven. He then formed his kingdom in rebellion against the rule of God. Knowing he could not personally overcome God, he purposely attacked God's prize creation, Eve. Eve succumbed to Satan's conniving temptation and, as a result, was expelled from the Garden of Eden by God. Their sin brought them under the control of Satan. Although Adam and Eve regretted their actions, they became a part of the rebellious kingdom of Satan.

Everyone who has not accepted Jesus is a part of the kingdom of Satan. Therefore, it is the responsibility of all Born-Again Christians to pray for

all those under the persuasion of Satan. This is because they accepted Jesus as their Personal Saviour, breaking Satan's stranglehold and giving them entrance into The Kingdom of God. As Born-Again

Knowing and experiencing God as our Father is the greatest blessing ever. However, we, blessed by God, must realize that blessings come with responsibilities. One of the responsibilities we have as Spiritual Sons and daughters of God, our Father, is going into the kingdom of Satan and setting our fellowmen free from Satan's kingdom of darkness via preaching The Atoning Death and Resurrection of Jesus the Christ.

How can we understand The Will of God in Heaven to be on Earth? I see Heaven as perfect, and indeed it is the will of God that perfection is found on earth as well. Praise God: a model world of peace will come when Jesus returns and rules from the throne of David. To this end, we pray - for the perfect rule of Christ on earth.

SEGMENT 5 OF THE LORD'S PRAYER: GIVE US THIS DAY OUR DAILY BREAD

All-natural and SPIRITUAL FATHERS must supply our daily needs. However, natural and Spiritual Fathers, in meeting the needs of their children, have a cut-off point. Once the children can fend for themselves and earn a living wage, the Father's responsibilities diminish. A good Father ~~raises~~ his children to become self-reliant and not dependent on others. One of the greatest joys a hard-working Father has is when his children can stand on their own two feet, which means they have become responsible for themselves.

God, our SPIRITUAL FATHER, has no cut-off point in His relationship with us as our Father and His children. It might sound strange and even disrespectful, and yet it is true: GOD, OUR FATHER, IS AT OUR BECK AND CALL EVERY MOMENT OF DAY AND NIGHT. Our Heavenly Father gives us good health so that we, as natural Spiritual Fathers, may place bread on our family's food table. As Spiritual Fathers, we provide our Spiritual Sons with the finest of the wheat (THE BREAD OF LIFE -THE WORD OF GOD).

Spiritual Fathers train us along life's journey to be independent and self-reliant. Our Heavenly Father also instructs us to be self-sufficient and yet never forget He is but a call away when found in difficulty. God is the wisest Father ever. Yet, although he puts spiritual mechanisms in

place that we honor and follow, we do not lack, for God supplies all our needs according to Holy Scriptures (see Philippians 4:19).

PROCESS 1: SEEK FIRST THE KINGDOM OF GOD.

God always supplies our needs. However, there is one condition we must meet, and that is to seek His Kingdom first. The rule of God in our life is paramount. As we serve God faithfully and love Him with all our heart, soul, and strength, He meets all our needs. The spiritual lesson in seeking God is that we serve God because WE LOVE HIM. WE DO NOT SERVE GOD FOR WHAT WE CAN RECEIVE FROM HIM.

MATHEW 6:25-34: ²⁵“THEREFORE I TELL YOU, DO NOT BE ANXIOUS ABOUT YOUR LIFE, WHAT YOU WILL EAT OR WHAT YOU WILL DRINK, NOR ABOUT YOUR BODY, WHAT YOU WILL PUT ON. IS NOT LIFE MORE THAN FOOD, AND THE BODY MORE THAN CLOTHING? ²⁶LOOK AT THE BIRDS OF THE AIR: THEY NEITHER SOW NOR REAP NOR GATHER INTO BARNES, AND YET YOUR HEAVENLY FATHER FEEDS THEM. ARE YOU NOT OF MORE VALUE THAN THEY? ²⁷AND WHICH OF YOU, BY BEING ANXIOUS, CAN ADD A SINGLE HOUR TO HIS SPAN OF LIFE?^[A] ²⁸AND WHY ARE YOU ANXIOUS ABOUT CLOTHING? CONSIDER THE LILIES OF THE FIELD, HOW THEY GROW: THEY NEITHER TOIL NOR SPIN, ²⁹YET I TELL YOU, EVEN SOLOMON IN ALL HIS GLORY WAS NOT ARRAYED LIKE ONE OF THESE. ³⁰BUT IF GOD, SO CLOTHES THE GRASS OF THE FIELD, WHICH TODAY IS ALIVE AND TOMORROW IS THROWN INTO THE OVEN, WILL HE NOT MUCH MORE CLOTHE YOU, O YOU OF LITTLE FAITH? ³¹THEREFORE DO NOT BE ANXIOUS, SAYING, ‘WHAT SHALL WE EAT?’ OR ‘WHAT SHALL WE DRINK?’ OR ‘WHAT SHALL WE WEAR?’ ³²FOR THE GENTILES SEEK AFTER ALL THESE THINGS, AND YOUR HEAVENLY FATHER KNOWS YOU NEED THEM ALL. ³³BUT SEEK FIRST THE KINGDOM OF GOD AND HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS, AND ALL THESE THINGS WILL BE ADDED TO YOU.³⁴“THEREFORE DO NOT BE ANXIOUS ABOUT TOMORROW, FOR TOMORROW WILL BE ANXIOUS FOR ITSELF. SUFFICIENT FOR THE DAY IS ITS TROUBLE.

PROCESS 2: SUPPORTING THE POOR

PROVERBS 19:17: WHOEVER IS GENEROUS TO THE POOR LENDS TO THE LORD, AND HE WILL REPAY HIM FOR HIS DEED.

Sharing and generosity, though similar, are yet estranged. Most of us give out of duty. In a sense, it is required of us to share. Generosity is giving beyond our means. It is also giving way beyond the need of the receiver. The Apostles, James, Peter, and John, instructed Barnabas and Paul to minister to the poor:

GALATIANS 2:9-10: WHEN JAMES AND CEPHAS AND JOHN, WHO SEEMED TO BE PILLARS, PERCEIVED THE GRACE GIVEN TO ME, THEY GAVE THE RIGHT KIND OF FELLOWSHIP TO BARNABAS AND ME, THAT WE SHOULD GO TO THE GENTILES AND THEY TO THE CIRCUMCISED. ¹⁰ ONLY, THEY ASKED US TO REMEMBER THE POOR, THE VERY THING I WAS EAGER TO DO.

God is no man's debtor. God, in His good time, will repay us beyond measure. However, it is out of Love's Compulsion that we give. We never give to get in return. God, who loves a cheerful giver, blesses those who minister to the poor.

SEGMENT F OF THE LORD'S PRAYER: LEAD US NOT INTO TEMPTATION, BUT DELIVER US FROM EVIL

No doubt, many of us find God leading us into sin is very confusing. However, we must remember that God is holy, and evil is foreign to His Holy Nature. Therefore, we need Scripture to interpret Scripture:

JAMES 1:13: LET NO ONE SAY WHEN HE IS TEMPTED, "I AM BEING TEMPTED BY GOD," FOR GOD CAN NOT BE TEMPTED WITH EVIL, AND HE TEMPTS NO ONE.

The Lord's prayer is that God's help is always available so that we may always avoid sin. Before the Born-Again experience, our feet ran swiftly to the dens of iniquity. We are always wanting and willing to be in an environment of depravity. Now saved from sin, our hearts cry; we keep away from all that leads to corruption. The Apostle Peter, filled with the Holy Spirit, challenges us to be holy:

1 PETER 1:15: BUT AS HE WHO CALLED YOU IS HOLY, YOU ALSO BE HOLY IN ALL YOUR CONDUCT,

God directs our steps away from temptation and delivers us from evil as we cry to Him for help. God sets a new path for us, away from the direction of sin.

SEGMENT G OF THE LORD'S PRAYER: FOR THINE IS THE KINGDOM, THE POWER, AND THE GLORY FOREVER AMEN

The Lord's Prayer ends with our acknowledgment of God's rule over His creation and his unparalleled (without equal, matchless) glory.

Many Theologians teach that The Lord's Prayer is but a model of how to pray. Though there is a ring of truth in their assumption, I believe it is THE PRAYER; we should often pray. It touches every facet of our life. I will go as far as to say it is the perfect prayer. So perfect, our Lord and Saviour gave us the teaching of The Lord's Prayer. Who knows better of approaching God our Father than his only begotten Son?

3.2 PRAYER OF AGREEMENT: There is great spiritual power when saints of God agree in Prayer:

MATHEW 18:19: AGAIN, I SAY TO YOU, IF TWO OF YOU AGREE ON EARTH ABOUT ANYTHING THEY ASK, IT WILL BE DONE FOR THEM BY MY FATHER IN HEAVEN.

3.3 PRAYER OF FAITH: Prayer without Faith and trust in God is fruitless.

JAMES 5:15: AND THE PRAYER OF FAITH WILL SAVE THE ONE WHO IS SICK, AND THE LORD WILL RAISE HIM. AND IF HE HAS COMMITTED SINS, HE WILL BE FORGIVEN.

3.4 PRAYER OF INTERCESSION: The Prayer of Intercession is a vital Prayer, which I believe is associated with our Priestly Anointing (see 1 Peter 2:9, Rev 1:6 and pages 13-15 of this book, Chapter 2 subheading the Breastplate of Righteousness). This essential prayer deals with our relationships with other members of The Body of Christ. It takes attention off us and focuses on others who need a lending hand in their walk with God. Exodus 17:8-13 cites a classic of concentrating on other peoples' plight.

I must admit that often my emphasis centers around three people and yet one. It is not The Triune Godhead. It is ME, MYSELF, and I. This is because so many of us lose ourselves. In other words, life and Christian

Life center around us. The Bible tells us to care for each other and to carry each other's burdens. There is a classic example of The Prayer of Intercession in Exodus 17:8-16:

THEN AMALEK CAME AND FOUGHT WITH ISRAEL AT REPHIDIM. ⁹ SO MOSES SAID TO JOSHUA, "CHOOSE FOR US MEN, AND GO OUT AND FIGHT WITH AMALEK. TOMORROW I WILL STAND ON THE TOP OF THE HILL WITH THE STAFF OF GOD IN MY HAND." ¹⁰ SO JOSHUA DID AS MOSES TOLD HIM AND FOUGHT WITH AMALEK, WHILE MOSES, AARON, AND HUR WENT UP TO THE TOP OF THE HILL. ¹¹ WHENEVER MOSES HELD UP HIS HAND, ISRAEL PREVAILED, AND WHENEVER HE LOWERED HIS HAND, AMALEK PREVAILED. ¹² BUT MOSES' HANDS GREW WEARY, SO THEY TOOK A STONE AND PUT IT UNDER HIM, AND HE SAT ON IT, WHILE AARON AND HUR HELD UP HIS HANDS, ONE ON ONE SIDE AND THE OTHER ON THE OTHER SIDE. SO, HIS HANDS WERE STEADY UNTIL THE GOING DOWN OF THE SUN. ¹³ AND JOSHUA OVERWHELMED AMALEK AND HIS PEOPLE WITH THE SWORD.¹⁴ THEN THE LORD SAID TO MOSES, "WRITE THIS AS A MEMORIAL IN A BOOK AND RECITE IT IN THE EARS OF JOSHUA, THAT I WILL UTTERLY BLOT OUT THE MEMORY OF AMALEK FROM UNDER HEAVEN." ¹⁵ AND MOSES BUILT AN ALTAR AND CALLED THE NAME OF IT. THE LORD IS MY BANNER, ¹⁶ SAYING, "A HAND UPON THE THRONE^[A] OF THE LORD! THE LORD WILL HAVE WAR WITH AMALEK FROM GENERATION TO GENERATION."

Joshua and his chosen army fought physically against the Amalekites. However, Moses, Aaron's, and Hur's persistent prayers won the battle. Raising the staff was a sign of total dependence upon God. It was a sign of prayerful intercession. Moses held the rod in his hand when God commissioned Moses at the burning bush to deliver God's chosen people, the Israelites. Moses used the self-same staff to bring the plagues upon Egypt. But now that God's people are in warfare against the Amalekites, God takes possession of Moses' staff and calls the staff-THE STAFF OF GOD.

Moses lifting the rod toward Heaven was a sign of trust in God. This is a classic example of us raising our hands to God in worship and faith.

3.5 PRAYER OF PRAISE: Praise invokes (summons) the presence of God:

PSALM 22:3: YOU ARE HOLY ENTHRONED ON THE PRAISES OF ISRAEL.'

The Hebrew word used for enthroned is yaw-shab:

yaw-shab'; A PRIMITIVE ROOT; PROPERLY, TO SIT DOWN (SPECIFICALLY AS JUDGE. IN AMBUSH, IN QUIET); BY IMPLICATION, TO DWELL, TO REMAIN; CAUSATIVELY, TO SETTLE, TO MARRY:—(MAKE TO) ABIDE(-ING), CONTINUE, (CAUSE TO, MAKE TO) DWELL(-ING), EASE SELF, ENDURE, ESTABLISH, FAIL, HABITATION, HAUNT, (MAKE TO) INHABIT(-ANT), MAKE TO KEEP (HOUSE), LURKING, MARRY(-ING), (BRING AGAIN TO) PLACE, REMAIN, RETURN, SEAT, SET(-TLE), (DOWN-) SIT(-DOWN. STILL, TING DOWN, -TING (PLACE) -UATE), TAKE, TARRY.

The King James Version Bible uses the INHABITS for ENTHRONED. When we Praise God, His Presence Dwells and Remains with us.

4.6 PRAYER OF THANKSGIVING: God honors those who are thankful.

PSALM 100:4: ENTER HIS GATES WITH THANKSGIVING, AND HIS COURTS WITH PRAISE! GIVE THANKS TO HIM. BLESS HIS NAME!

4.7 PRAYER OF SUPPLICATION: God meets our daily needs when we ask Him:

PHILIPPIANS 4:6: DO NOT BE ANXIOUS ABOUT ANYTHING, BUT IN EVERYTHING BY PRAYER AND SUPPLICATION WITH THANKSGIVING LET YOUR REQUESTS BE MADE KNOWN TO GOD.

4.8 PRAYER OF WORSHIP: Spirit-led worship will lead us to God's will.

GENESIS 24:48: THEN I BOWED MY HEAD AND WORSHIPED THE LORD AND BLESSED THE LORD, THE GOD OF MY MASTER ABRAHAM, WHO HAD LED ME BY THE RIGHT WAY^l TO TAKE THE DAUGHTER OF MY MASTER'S KINSMAN FOR HIS SON.

4.9 PRAYING IN THE SPIRIT: There are those occasions we are weighed down with problems that perplex (baffle, confuse) us to the extent we do not know how and what to pray. At these crucial times, we must pray another Prayer that Jesus gave to us -PRAYING IN THE SPIRIT:

ROMANS 8:26-27: LIKEWISE, THE SPIRIT HELPS US IN OUR WEAKNESS. WE DO NOT KNOW WHAT TO PRAY FOR AS WE OUGHT, BUT THE SPIRIT HIMSELF INTERCEDES FOR US WITH GROANINGS TOO DEEP FOR WORDS. ²⁷, AND HE WHO SEARCHES HEARTS KNOWS WHAT IS THE MIND OF THE SPIRIT BECAUSE THE SPIRIT INTERCEDES FOR THE SAINTS ACCORDING TO THE WILL OF GOD.

The Spiritual Father must encourage his Spiritual Son to hunger and thirst after the experience that when he faces his dark times, The Holy Spirit will pray through Him. PRAYING IN THE SPIRIT is unique (only one of its kind, distinctive, matchless) for the following Spiritual Sons:

- IT IS NOT US AS INDIVIDUALS PRAYING. IT IS THE HOLY SPIRIT PRAYING THROUGH US, USING OUR VOCAL CHORDS AND, MAY I ADD, FOR OUR WELL-BEING.
- WE DO NOT KNOW WHAT TO PRAY FOR, AND THEREFORE THE SPIRIT PRAYS ACCORDING TO THE MIND OF GOD. THE HOLY SPIRIT PRAYS THROUGH US AND FOR US, FOR HE KNOWS WHAT IS BEST FOR US.
- THE HOLY SPIRIT MAKES INTERCESSION FOR US, WITH GROANING WE CAN NOT EXPRESS.
- THE HOLY SPIRIT SEARCHES OUR HEARTS AND PRAYS FOR WHAT WE TRULY NEED.
- GOD SEARCHES OUR HEARTS.
- THE HOLY SPIRIT PRAYS HIS MIND THROUGH US, WHICH IS ACCORDING TO THE WILL OF GOD FOR OUR LIFE.

Though we have all the blessings of Praying, we often stray from God's ultimate purpose. However, when we pray in The Spirit and through the Spirit, we pray according to the mind and will of God,

ROMANS 8:28-29: AND WE KNOW THAT FOR THOSE WHO LOVE GOD, ALL THINGS WORK TOGETHER FOR GOOD, **FOR THOSE WHO ARE CALLED ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE.** ²⁹ FOR THOSE WHOM HE FOREKNEW HE ALSO PREDESTINED TO BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON, IN ORDER, HE MIGHT BE THE FIRSTBORN AMONG MANY BROTHERS

We must also understand the ultimate purpose of The Holy Spirit praying through us. We often side-tracked in our walk with God. Like Jeremiah, the tender-hearted and weeping Prophet, whom God knew before being placed in his mother's womb. Other than God placing us in the womb of our mothers, God placed His profound purpose within us. When side-tracked from the intent of God (through trials, circumstances beyond our control, and even our waywardness), the prayers of The Holy Spirit help direct us back to the purpose of God. This is made clear in verse 28. **It is God's purpose.** We conformed to the image of Jesus. No matter what comes our way and more so evil, our God will see us through, for The Holy Spirit is praying for us and through us.

LAST WORD

THE TEST OF A MAN'S SOUL IS NOT WHAT HE DOES FOR GOD; IT IS HOW MUCH TIME HE SPENDS ALONE WITH GOD (author unknown).

AT CERTAIN TIMES SERVANTS OF GOD, BY THE PROMPTING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT, MUST SHUT THEMSELVES OFF FROM: **THEIR SPIRITUAL RESPONSIBILITIES OF MINISTRY**

We must shut ourselves off from what controls our time and energy to be with God. The spiritual strength of a man of God is decided by how much time he spends alone with God. When we are alone with God, the Holy Spirit sheds abroad in our spirit the expressions of His Love and Power and leads us into the next phase of our ministries.

ROMANS 5:5: HOPE DOES NOT PUT US TO SHAME BECAUSE GOD'S LOVE HAS BEEN POURED INTO OUR HEARTS THROUGH THE HOLY SPIRIT WHO HAS BEEN GIVEN TO US.

Apostle Paul's Evangelical ministry was effective in Philippi. Lydia, the seller of purple dye, and her family were saved under the ministry of Paul. Apostle Paul delivered the demon-possessed girl from a fortune-telling demon.

No doubt, a little revival took place at Philippi. And yet God allowed Paul imprisonment for healing the demon-possessed girl. Locked in prison, Paul and Silas praised and worshipped The Lord. Sometimes, strange but true God takes his servants away from their ministry to be SHUT IN WITH HIM. At midnight (the darkest hour), they prayed and worshipped The Lord. Shut off in prison from their fellowmen, yet SHUT IN WITH GOD. GOD'S PRESENCE CAME IN ON THAT PRISON, AND THEY WERE

SET FREE. BY THE POWER OF GOD. What resulted from being taken out of a revival to be shut in prison? First, the jailer and his family were Born-Again (see Acts 16:11-34).

Let me share an acronym that The Holy Spirit shared with me concerning PRAYER:

PRAYER

REVEALS

ALMIGHTY

YESHUA (JESUS)

ETERNAL

RIGHTEOUSNESS

READER'S NOTES

CHAPTER 12
THE CONFIDANT

JAMES 5:16

CONFESS YOUR FAULTS TO ANOTHER, AND PRAY ONE FOR ANOTHER, THAT YOU MAY BE HEALED. THE EFFECTUAL FERVENT PRAYER OF A RIGHTEOUS MAN AVAILETH MUCH.

Every person needs a confidant. Someone we can share the good and the bad of our life. A person we can trust. A person who takes our life secrets to their grave, someone who hates the bad things we do but never stops loving us. Jonathan and David had such a relationship. They were covenant friends (see 1 Samuel 18). Considering the meaning of Jonathan's name (gift from God), we note that their friendship was a gift from God. Time and time again, Jonathan warned David of his Father's evil intentions toward David. Their relationship went further than the grave. After the death of Jonathan, David cared for Jonathan's son Mephibosheth, which means to blow away shame. Mephibosheth was a cripple living in Lodebar, which means Barrenness. This speaks of poverty and shame, and it is from this environment that David sends for Jonathan's son to come and live with him in the palace (see 2 Samuel Chap. 9).

The role of the Father is to be the confidant of his Spiritual Sons. The Father must win the Spiritual Sons over to himself through his caring and loving attitude. Through his actions, he must win over the respect and friendship of his Spiritual Sons; therefore, showing care is essential. Though the senior in the relationship, the Spiritual Father must show respect to his Spiritual Son.

RESPECT

ENCOURAGE

SERVE

PRAISE

ENTHUSE

CONGRATULATE

THANKS

RESPECT (THE R OF RESPECT)

We reap what we sow; therefore, we must always be respectful in our relationships with people. I once had an attitude that disregarded younger people, having the foolish notion of who they are to witness Christ to me. I had the silly idea of what they knew of life. I wondered why many younger people were distant. Over the years, God helped me to overcome this bad attitude. The Scriptures convinced me to change my foolish attitude:

1 TIMOTHY 4:12: LET NO ONE DESPISE YOU FOR YOUR YOUTH, BUT SET THE BELIEVERS AN EXAMPLE IN SPEECH, IN CONDUCT, IN LOVE, IN FAITH, IN PURITY.

PSALM 8:2: OUT OF THE MOUTH OF BABIES AND INFANTS, YOU HAVE ESTABLISHED STRENGTH BECAUSE OF YOUR FOES, TO STILL THE ENEMY AND THE AVENGER.

I grew up in a South African Culture that demanded the respect of the young toward their elders. Becoming a Born-Again, Spirit-filled Christian, I soon learned RESPECT BEGETS RESPECT. And therefore, for the young to respect their elders, the elders would have to respect the young and vice-versa. The Word of God teaches that what you sow is what you reap. Therefore, by the Grace of The Lord, I accepted the young as my equal and, may I add, more so, The Born-Again young people. My reasoning was simple. The young are similar, for the same God who dwells within me dwells in them, making us both The Temple of God, the very habitation of The Holy Spirit.

ENCOURAGE (THE E OF RESPECT)

So many Ascended Gifts concentrate on the negatives of people. No doubt, we must correct and discipline our Spiritual Sons. However, if this is the only approach we will adopt, we will drive people away from us. Born-Again Christians and, more so, the Spiritual Fathers are to

encourage and not discourage people. As much as the Father must make known the faults and failures of the Spiritual Son, his approach to correcting and disciplining the Spiritual Son must be tactful. In dealing with the Spiritual Sons I have trained, I always concentrated on the strengths before drawing their attention to the weaknesses. By the Grace of God, I knew that any form of correction without encouragement first would cause the Spiritual Son to lose faith in himself and me. Being discreet (CAREFUL) with people's feelings is a great asset in training people. Praise and commendation should always precede correction. This psychological method works wonders in forging lasting relationships.

SERVE (THE S OF RESPECT)

In building a friendship relationship, the Father must have a servant's heart toward the Spiritual Son. However, he must become the spiritual servant of the Spiritual Son in the light of spiritual and not physical servitude. Many a Father makes the grave mistake of overemphasizing the role Joshua had towards Moses and the role of Elisha toward Elijah. Both these Spiritual Sons worked tirelessly for their Spiritual Fathers. Joshua was the servant of Moses. Elisha poured water onto the hands of Elijah. These Spiritual Sons undoubtedly had a mundane (everyday) role toward their Spiritual Fathers, which I believe showed their gratitude toward them. However, as Spiritual Fathers, we must not see our Spiritual Sons as butlers and servants. We are called to serve them with the most refined wheat of God's Word. We called to strengthen them with the knowledge gained from our ministries. Elijah had a school of Prophets, but only Elisha went with him on his ministerial travels. Moses could have chosen a Spiritual Son from many faithful men, but he chose Joshua.

Spiritual Fathers, like natural parents, serve their Spiritual Sons with the threefold cord of parenting:

PROTECTION

PROVISION

PROMOTION

PRAISE (THE P OF RESPECT)

Most people respond to praise. It is one of the significant assets in building lasting relationships. It is not surprising that we all love to be

around people who constantly praise us and say nice things about us. Spiritual Sons love to be in the company of their Spiritual Fathers, who always praise them for their progress in the training program. Praise builds a friendship relationship that lasts way beyond the training program. Over the years of my religious experience, I could never Father those I had not befriended and those who had not befriended me. Sharing the following acronym, What The Holy Spirit laid on my spirit, helps us to see the importance of building a friendship before we begin the Fathering role:

FRIENDS

REJOICE

IN

EACH-OTHER'S

NEVER-ENDING

DREAM

Spiritual Fathers who have a friendship relationship with their Spiritual Sons realize they are working with Spiritual Sons, who, like all BornAgain Christians, are earmarked by Satan for failure. Satan knowing the Spiritual Son's potential to affect his wicked kingdom, makes concerted efforts to discourage and side-track the Spiritual Son. Problems and circumstances the Spiritual Son never had before suddenly appear. A working Son suddenly must work weekends and overtime during the week. Rest assured, he is too tired to continue the training program. Healthy Spiritual Sons will suddenly get seriously ill and unable to continue the training program. Time and space do not allow mentioning so many more attacks.

A wise Father knows the sudden negative attacks are from Satan and, therefore, will call other Spiritual Fathers to intercede with him to break the stranglehold Satan is putting on his Spiritual Sons.

ENTHUSE (THE E OF RESPECT)

How may the Spiritual Father enthruse his Spiritual Son? To enthruse someone is TO STIMULATE, EXCITE AND MOTIVATE THEM INTO ACTION. Phelps, the most famous American Olympian swimmer, had his moments of boredom. As good a swimmer as he was, he found going to practice sessions boring: "THERE WERE TIMES I WOULDN'T COME TO PRACTICE BECAUSE IT DIDN'T EXCITE ME. IT WASN'T INTERESTING. I WAS GOING THROUGH THE MOTIONS." SEE :

[HTTPS://WWW.BRAINYQUOTE.COM/TOPICS/EXCITE-QUOTES](https://www.brainyquote.com/topics/excite-quotes)).

Michael Phelps's trainer had a problem on hand, and one of the ways he could get Michael to attend was to make the training sessions exciting and meaningful. He convinced Michael that the reward of all the continuous training was Michael becoming the world champion swimmer. A wise Spiritual Father must enthruse his Spiritual Son that the result of attending all the extra Bible Studies and on-hand training sessions will not go unrewarded. Continuing in the training program rewards seeing the unsaved come to The Lord. The Born-Again who come under the future ministry of the Spiritual Father will be perfected, comforted, and edified (see Ephesians 4:12).

CONGRATULATE (THE C OF RESPECT)

Acknowledging the Spiritual Son's achievements in the training program has a marked effect on his future accomplishments. It motivates him to do better.

Over the years I engaged in ministry, I discovered that my students and Spiritual Sons responded to extrinsic motivation. I never did this publicly (more so in the presence of the other students). Instead, I sat down with the students and the Spiritual Sons ON A ONE-TO-ONE BASIS and congratulated them. This action brought better results. Unfortunately, those few students and Spiritual Sons were not doing so well. I asked God for wisdom on how to deal with them. I did not want to throw a wet blanket over them and thus discourage them. All I asked them was to do their best, and I encouraged them to spend more time in Prayer and Devotion with The Lord, giving them the understanding that they will do their best when they spend creditable time with God. Their Lord helps them. I always encouraged them with these words: IT IS NOT ALWAYS WHAT YOU KNOW THAT COUNTS. IT IS WHOM YOU KNOW, AND BE IT THAT YOU KNOW THE LORD THROUGH PRAYER AND DEVOTION. THE LORD WHO KNOWS EVERYTHING WILL IMPART TO YOU WHAT YOU DO NOT KNOW, FOR GOD IS THE AUTHOR OF ALL

KNOWLEDGE. Praise God their grades and practical training sessions improved.

THANKS (THE T OF RESPECT)

Over the many years of teaching and training students in Schools of Ministry, Bible Colleges, and one Seminary, God has taught me the power of saying thank you to my students and Spiritual Sons. I often thanked them for:

THEIR PUNCTUALITY

COMPLETING THEIR ASSIGNMENTS ON TIME

ACCOMPANYING ME ON MY PREACHING ENGAGEMENTS

HELPING THE WEAKER STUDENTS

PRAYING FOR ME AND THE STUDENTS

My gratitude to my students and SPIRITUAL SONS brought out the best in them. They saw my sincerity toward them and appreciated my recognizing their commitment.

NOTA BENE

There are several blessings in our role as SPIRITUAL FATHERS and Confidants. The wonder of these blessings motivates us to excel even more in our God-given responsibility of creating the future Leaders of The Body of Christ:

WE SEE A SIMILARITY BETWEEN OUR MINISTRIES IN OUR SPIRITUAL SONS.

THEY OFTEN QUOTE US.

THEY PRAY FOR US.

SOME EVEN NAME THEIR CHILDREN AFTER US.

MANY, WHEN IN THE MINISTRY, INVITE US TO PREACH IN THEIR CHURCHES.

MANY OF OUR SPIRITUAL SONS PROMOTE OUR MINISTRY TO THEIR FRIENDS AND FAMILY.

THEY CONFIDE IN US.

THEY INVITE US TO THEIR SPECIAL FAMILY OCCASIONS.

STUDY TO SHOW YOURSELF APPROVED UNTO GOD

- List at least three biblical reasons why God gave man the power of reproduction.
- What is the great responsibility that goes with the power of reproducing after our kind?
- What is the role of Spiritual Fathers?
- Why should solid spiritual and friendly relations exist between the Spiritual Father and the Spiritual Son?
- What is the principal purpose of Fathering?
- Why should Fathering be first and foremost based on the development of Christlike character?
- Why is it often exceedingly difficult to break bad habits?
- Why should good habits replace bad habits?
- List and explain how we use the weapons of warfare.
- Explain why it is better to attack than defend.
- List and explain the threefold cord of Spiritual Fathers.
- Draft a 20-page essay on the Born-Again child of God being the actual Temple of God and the habitation of the Spirit of God.
- Your preaching or your Spiritual Sons' spiritual and ministerial development is more important to you as a Father.
- List at least five pieces of evidence that succeeded in the role of a Spiritual Father that would convince you as a Father that you have achieved in your Fathering part.

➤ _____
—

READER'S NOTES

CHAPTER 13
CHOOSING THE SPIRITUAL SONS

JEREMIAH 17:9-10:

THE HEART IS HOPELESSLY DARK AND DECEITFUL, A PUZZLE NO ONE CAN FIGURE OUT. HOWEVER, I, GOD, SEARCH THE HEART AND EXAMINE THE MIND. I GET TO THE HEART OF THE HUMAN. I GET TO THE ROOT OF THINGS. I TREAT THEM AS THEY ARE, NOT AS THEY PRETEND TO BE.

THE THREE GROUPS

Whenever we consider training men for the ministry, we must follow the example of Jesus. Some people may ask why? The answer is simple. He alone knows the hearts of men. There is absolutely nothing hidden from God:

Jesus had massive audiences. At one time, He fed over five thousand with five loaves and two fishes (Mt 14:14-21). It was from the multitude that Jesus chose the seventy preachers (Luke 10:1-17). Pastor Paul Seaberg, one of my Bible College Lecturers, said there were three groups of people that surrounded Jesus:

THE OUTER CIRCLE (THE SEVENTY PREACHERS)

THE INNER CIRCLE (NINE OF THE TWELVE APOSTLES)

THE INNERMOST CIRCLE (THE THREE APOSTLES: PETER, JAMES, AND JOHN)

LUKE 6:12-13: IN THESE DAYS HE WENT OUT TO THE MOUNTAIN

TO PRAY, AND ALL NIGHT HE CONTINUED IN PRAYER TO GOD. ¹³ AND WHEN

DAY CAME, HE CALLED HIS DISCIPLES AND CHOSE FROM THEM TWELVE,

WHOM HE NAMED APOSTLES:

When we consider Fathering God's elect for active service, we must consult The Lord of the harvest. God knows who has been called and set aside for ministry (AND THAT BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD). When we act on our own accord, we will most definitely choose those outside of

the call of Ascended Gifted Ministry. The Old Testament book of Jeremiah convinces us that God chooses His servants even before their birth. Therefore, it is essential that in setting men and women aside for training, we must hear from God:

JEREMIAH 1:5 “BEFORE I FORMED YOU IN THE WOMB, I KNEW YOU, AND BEFORE YOU WERE BORN, I CONSECRATED YOU; I APPOINTED YOU A PROPHET TO THE NATIONS.”

As Spiritual Fathers and Leaders of The Local Churches, we must seek God’s face through prayer to guide us in choosing our Spiritual Sons. Seeking God for guidance through Prayer and Fasting shows our respect for God's sovereign will.

Though we believe in prayer, we must decide whether we have honestly heard from God in choosing our Spiritual Sons through various confirmations. So often, we enter prayer with preconceived answers, and our whole prayer exercise is asking for God’s approval. We should never enter His presence with preconceived solutions whenever we seek God's direction. We must ensure that we are not requesting God for His rubber stamp of approval.

A wise Father will always seek the advice and counsel of the senior men and women of The Local Church. Better still, he consults the Leadership of The Church and that being the Eldership and the Deaconate:

PSALM 37:30-31: THE MOUTH OF THE RIGHTEOUS UTTERS WISDOM, AND HIS TONGUE SPEAKS JUSTICE. ³¹THE LAW OF HIS GOD IS IN HIS HEART; HIS STEPS DO NOT SLIP.

Other than consulting other Leaders of The Local Church, specific criteria must be adopted to decide a wise decision:

FAITHFUL IN CHURCH ATTENDANCE

CONSISTENTLY TITHES

TEACHABLE ATTITUDE

SUBMISSIVE?

DO THEY HAVE THE HEART OF A SERVANT?

FAITHFULNESS IN CHURCH ATTENDANCE

No one in their right mind would invest in a bank with a meager interest rate. As Spiritual Fathers, we should seek out those people of God that will bring outstanding results and blessings to the work of God. According to The Word of God:

LUKE 16:1: HE ALSO SAID TO THE DISCIPLES, "THERE WAS A RICH MAN WHO HAD A MANAGER, AND CHARGES WERE BROUGHT TO HIM. THIS MAN WAS WASTING HIS POSSESSIONS.

With this Scriptural definition in mind, Spiritual Fathers should seek out their Spiritual Sons. They must find those faithful men and women in their walk with God and dedicated to God in all spheres of service. They attend all duly called Church services. They are punctual. They express faith in God no matter what circumstances prevail. When Spiritual Fathers see this in their Spiritual Sons, they can hope and trust God to do great exploits in the future with their Spiritual Sons.

CONSISTENT TITHER

Spiritual Fathers often choose the wrong **CONSISTENT TITHER**, because they base their choice on people's abilities and personalities. No doubt, this, in a small way, does help Spiritual Fathers choose Spiritual Sons; however, this is not the ultimate criterion. A hallmark of true Christian character, which blatantly stands out, is faithfulness in tithing and **GENEROSITY**. Spiritual Sons who withhold their tithe from God and refuse to aid their fellow Christian brethren who are desperately in financial need are those whom Spiritual Fathers must avoid as potential Spiritual Sons. Suppose people cannot give their money to God and help the poor. Have they indeed given themselves to God? Spiritual Fathers must never forget that one's **VERTICAL RELATIONSHIP** WILL **WAYS** DETERMINE one ONE's **HORIZONTAL RELATIONSHIP**.

TEACHABLE SPIRIT

Often Ministers of God are asked to define humility. Their definitions, in most cases, are theologically profound. In contrast, a precise and straightforward explanation of humility is an actual estimate of who you are, what you are, and what you know. Spiritual Fathers should avoid Mr. and Mrs. Know It All. As Christians, we should be proud of whom

we are but never express ourselves as those who know it all: A TEACHABLE SPIRIT IS NECESSARY WHEN SEEKING OUT SPIRITUAL SONS.

SUBMISSIVE

As much as being a parent is a significant blessing, it comes with grave responsibility. Parents have the weighty responsibility of instilling in the minds of their children the very will of God. Children, like all people, have a sense of their own. Every person is born with the power of choice. Godly parenting teaches the child to make the right choices in life. Using the rod of correction steers children in the right direction. Spiritual Fathers are like parents, and one of the critical factors that help the Father choose the true Son is to see whether they refuse correction. A submissive person will always readily submit to a discipline exercised in a spirit of love and care (not that the Spiritual Father uses a rod when correcting. He lovingly uses The Word of God to restore the Sons).

No doubt, we are living in a highly materialistic world. Everyone wants to own the best. All seek the best-paid jobs and careers, and may I add, that is not evil. However, far removed are Christians from the standards of the world. Christian servants are not in it for what they can get out of it but for what they can put into it. Faithful Christian service is not motivated for gain. Scriptural Christianity gives of your possessions and the giving of self. The Father must seek out those who do things for The Church and people simply because they love God's Church and all people. They are love-motivated and not greed motivated. When choosing Spiritual Sons, Spiritual Fathers and leaders must know that not all their choices will excel. Sadly, some will fail and even divorce themselves from the training programs. Though this is inevitable, the Ascended Gifts, Spiritual Fathers, must take heart. Jesus, our Lord, and Saviour, God in the flesh, chose an Apostle who betrayed Him.

MATHEW 22:14: FOR MANY ARE CALLED, BUT FEW ARE CHOSEN."

SPIRITUAL APPLICATION

All men are prone (likely) to misjudge and incorrectly analyze (study) their fellow man. It is sad and yet true when considering others for special appointments. We concentrate on perfection. Wise and seasoned men of God have discovered over the years that GOD DOES NOT LOOK FOR PERFECTION IN PEOPLE. RATHER GOD LOOKS FOR THE POTENTIAL IN PEOPLE THAT WILL LEAD TO PERFECTION.

A classic example of this is found in the choosing of a new king to replace Saul. The Prophet Samuel viewed young David's brothers, and though they were solid and sturdy (robust, durable), he rejected them. Within his spirit, Samuel responded to God's voice of rejection. David's Father told Samuel that one more son minded the sheep in the field.

It was from this obscurity that God chose David. This young shepherd youth was not in the public eye. He spent his day with the sheep he minded, whom he led to green pastures, and clean running streams of water protected the sheep from ravenous animals and thieves. This is an excellent lesson for Spiritual Fathers when choosing their Spiritual Sons:

THE HUMAN EYE WILL ONLY SEE THE OUTER MAN. HOWEVER, THE SPIRIT OF MAN TUNED TO THE SPIRIT OF GOD WILL SEE THE INNER MAN. THE VERY GODLY POTENTIAL LIES DEEP WITHIN, WAITING TO BE TAPPED AND RELEASED TO A LOST AND DYING WORLD. THE HOLY SPIRIT PROVED TO ME OVER THE YEARS:

GOD WILL TAKE A NOBODY FROM NOWHERE AND MAKE HIM A SOMEBODY. AND AFTER GOD HAS TAKEN THAT NOBODY FROM NOWHERE. AND MADE HIM A SOMEBODY GOD WILL PLACE HIM SOMEWHERE AND THEREAFTER SEND HIM EVERYWHERE.

Sadly, man always considers status (rank, standing, grade) when choosing people to fulfill positions. I must concur (agree) that we must have the best people for the job at hand, and therefore we consider their education, culture, reputation, and experience. I always boast that when it comes to my calling. I was highly qualified. Am I boastful? Yes, I am more than boastful, for I boast in God. Do I have the audacity (fearlessness) to boast? Yes, but do I not know that PRIDE GOES BEFORE A FALL? Yes, I do know. However, I am not bragging about myself; I am boasting about God. Man looks at the outer frame. God looks to the inner man, the spirit of man. Hear what God says about my calling and many more like me:

[1 CORINTHIANS 1:27](#): BUT GOD CHOSE WHAT IS FOOLISH IN THE WORLD TO SHAME THE WISE; GOD CHOSE WHAT IS WEAK IN THE WORLD TO SHAME THE STRONG.

God chose His servants before the foundation of the world, and may I add, with all warts and faults, for God, through The Power of The Gospel, pre-ordained their salvation. They are changed into a new creation, likened unto His only begotten Son.

In the early years of my salvation, I yearned for the pulpit. I could not wait to preach. My concentration was obsessed with preaching. Oft times, it was the only thing that filled my mind. There was even an element of jealousy when others reached the pulpit before I did. I prayed about this, and God's Abundant Grace gave me the power to wait. During this waiting period, God taught me many beautiful truths which have enriched my ministry:

THE HOLY SPIRIT CONVINCED ME TO STUDY GOD'S WORD, NOT JUST TO KNOW GOD SO THAT I MAY PREACH THE WORD. I WAS DEEPLY IMPRESSED TO STUDY GOD'S WORD SO THAT I MAY APPLY THE WORD OF GOD TO MY LIFE SO THAT I MAY BECOME A LIVING TESTIMONY OF GOD'S ABUNDANT GRACE TO LIFE, A LIFE SEPARATED FROM THE WORLD AND A RESOLUTE CONSECRATED LICE UNTO GOD.

STUDY TO SHOW YOURSELVES APPROVED UNTO GOD

- Why must we follow Jesus' example in choosing Spiritual Sons?
- List and explain the three groups that followed Jesus.
- List and explain the criteria when choosing your Spiritual Sons.

READER'S NOTES

CHAPTER 14
THE SPIRITUAL FATHER

2 KINGS 2:12 ESV

AND ELISHA SAW IT, AND HE CRIED, "MY FATHER, MY FATHER! THE CHARIOTS OF ISRAEL AND ITS HORSEMEN!" AND HE SAW HIM NO MORE. THEN HE TOOK HOLD OF HIS CLOTHES AND TORE THEM INTO TWO PIECES.

God has ordained the Ascended Gifted Ministries to instruct and train people for the ministry. The Five Ascended Gifts are Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors, and Teachers.

In the study of Biblical Numerology, the number 5 speaks of Grace. Many scholars speak of the Five Ascended Gifts as the Grace Gifts.

THE GRACE GIFTS

Each Ascended Gift has a level of Grace to produce after their kind. Apostles produce Apostles. Prophets produce Prophets. Evangelists produce Evangelists. Pastors produce Pastors. Teachers produce Teachers. The Grace is given to each Gift to fulfill their Ministry of Reproduction, seen in the purpose of The Five Ascended Gifts:

EPHESIANS 4:7-16: BUT GRACE WAS GIVEN TO EACH ONE OF US ACCORDING TO THE MEASURE OF CHRIST'S GIFT. ⁸ THEREFORE, IT SAYS, "WHEN HE ASCENDED ON HIGH HE LED A HOST OF CAPTIVES, AND HE GAVE GIFTS TO MEN." ⁹ (IN SAYING, "HE ASCENDED," WHAT DOES IT MEAN BUT THAT HE HAD ALSO DESCENDED INTO THE LOWER REGIONS, THE EARTH? ¹⁰ HE WHO DESCENDED IS THE ONE WHO ALSO ASCENDED FAR ABOVE ALL THE HEAVENS THAT HE MIGHT FILL ALL THINGS.)

¹¹ AND HE GAVE THE APOSTLES, THE PROPHETS, THE EVANGELISTS, THE SHEPHERDS, AND TEACHERS:

1. TO EQUIP OF THE SAINTS FOR THE WORK OF SERVICE
2. TO THE BUILDING UP OF THE BODY OF CHRIST
3. UNTIL WE ALL ATTAIN TO THE UNITY OF THE FAITH,
4. THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE SPIRITUAL SON OF GOD,
5. TO A MATURE MAN,
6. TO THE MEASURE OF THE STATURE WHICH BELONGS TO THE FULLNESS OF CHRIST.

AS A RESULT, WE ARE NO LONGER TO BE CHILDREN, TOSSED HERE AND THEREBY WAVES AND CARRIED ABOUT BY EVERY WIND OF DOCTRINE, BY THE TRICKERY OF MEN, BY CRAFTINESS IN DECEITFUL SCHEMING; ¹⁵ BUT SPEAKING THE TRUTH IN LOVE, WE ARE TO GROW UP IN ALL ASPECTS INTO HIM WHO IS THE HEAD, EVEN CHRIST, ¹⁶ FROM WHOM THE WHOLE BODY, BEING FITTED AND HELD TOGETHER BY WHAT EVERY JOINT SUPPLY, ACCORDING TO THE PROPER WORKING OF EACH INDIVIDUAL PART, CAUSES THE GROWTH OF THE BODY FOR THE BUILDING UP OF ITSELF IN LOVE.

DIFFERENT GRACES

Too often, Men of God allow their disappointments and hurts to rob them of God's great trust in them. As a result, they give up Fathering Spiritual Sons. Ascended Gifted ministries are very demanding. Ascended Gifts have many responsibilities besides training and Fathering for the ministry. In addition, he has a family he must nurture (look after and support). The workload often supersedes the enduring physical ability of any man, Ascended Gift or not. Therefore, the Father must be encouraged and prayed for as much as the Spiritual Son.

Often in Churches, the Fathering program breaks down, and sad to say, many future Ascended Gifts are lost in the process. I have seen many outstanding Ascended Gifted men crumble (crushed) because of THE BURN OUT SYNDROME (CONDITION). But unfortunately, some of these great men of God are taking too much upon themselves. The result of all this is that in the long run (and may I add even the short run), not only will the Father break down, but the Local Church will also suffer, his

marriage will fall apart, and no doubt the Fathering program will end abruptly. Therefore, for the Ascended Gifted Father to escape the burn-out syndrome, the following initiatives must be implemented:

- AT LEAST THREE TIMES PER YEAR, THE FATHER MUST HAVE A THREE-WEEK BREAK FROM THE FATHERING PROGRAMME. OTHER THAN TAKING THE THREE BREAKS FROM THE FATHERING PROGRAMME, THE FATHER MUST HAVE A ONE-MONTH HOLIDAY TO SPEND WITH HIS FAMILY. THE MONTH VACATION MUST NOT COINCIDE WITH THE FATHERING BREAKS, FOR THE MERE FACT THAT THE FATHER WILL BE BUSY WITH HIS OTHER CHURCH DUTIES. HOWEVER, DURING THIS VACATION WITH HIS FAMILY, HE MUST HAVE A COMPLETE BREAK FROM ALL CHURCH ACTIVITIES.
- BE IT THAT THERE ARE OTHER ASCENDED GIFTED MINISTERS ON THE LEADERSHIP TEAM. THE FATHER MUST BRING THEM ABOARD AS SPIRITUAL FATHERS WHO WILL SPECIALIZE IN THEIR RESPECTIVE MINISTRIES, TRAINING THE SPIRITUAL SONS IN THEIR SPECIFIC MINISTRIES. NO DOUBT, THIS ACTION HINGES COMPLETELY ON THE SPIRITUAL SONS ' TELL-TALE SIGNS OF HIS MINISTRY. ONE OF THE KEYS TO GOOD FATHERING WHICH BRINGS RESULTS, IS THAT EACH OF THE FIVEFOLD MINISTRIES MUST REPRODUCE AFTER THEIR KIND. AS AN APPLE TREE BEARS APPLES, IN LIKE MANNER MUST THE PASTOR REPRODUCE PASTORS. AS THE ORANGE TREE BEARS FRUIT IN LIKE MANNER, MUST THE PROPHET REPRODUCE PROPHETS? AS THE GUAVA TREE PRODUCES GUAVAS IN LIKE MANNER, MUST THE EVANGELISTS REPRODUCE EVANGELISTS? JUST AS THE PEAR TREE PRODUCES PEARS IN LIKE MANNER, MUST THE TEACHER REPRODUCE TEACHERS? FINALLY, AS AN ORANGE TREE PRODUCES ORANGES, SO MUST APOSTLES REPRODUCE APOSTLES. JUST AS OUR GOD IS NOT A GOD OF CONFUSION, WE, TOO, LIKE OUR GOD, MUST NOT BRING CONFUSION TO OUR SPIRITUAL SONS. SPIRITUAL FATHERS BRING CONFUSED MINISTRIES TO THE CHURCH BY FATHERING SPIRITUAL SONS OUTSIDE THEIR JURISDICTION (INFLUENCE) OF MINISTRY. A PASTOR DOES NOT HAVE FATHERING INFLUENCE ON A SON WHO HAS AN EVANGELICAL CALLING. IN MY

PERSONAL EXPERIENCE AND STUDY OF THE WORD OF GOD CONCERNING THE FATHERING PROGRAMME. I HAVE ONLY COME ACROSS ONE HUMAN BEING WHO HAD THE GOD-GIVEN ABILITY, AND MAY I ADD A MANDATE FROM THE HOLY SPIRIT TO FATHER THREE DIFFERENT GROUPS OF SPIRITUAL SONS WITH THREE DIFFERENT ASCENDED GIFTS STILL IN INFANCY (EXCEEDINGLY EARLY STAGES). THIS MAN OF GOD WAS NONE OTHER THAN THE MOST PROLIFIC APOSTLE OUTSIDE OF JESUS, SAUL, WHO BECAME PAUL. THE HOLY SPIRIT HAD BLESSED THIS OUTSTANDING APOSTLE AS A PREACHER (AN EVANGELIST), AN APOSTLE, AND A TEACHER:

1 CORINTHIANS 4:15: FOR THOUGH YOU HAVE COUNTLESS GUIDES IN CHRIST. YOU DO NOT HAVE MANY FATHERS. FOR I BECAME YOUR FATHER IN CHRIST JESUS THROUGH THE GOSPEL.

1 [TIMOTHY 1:11](#): FOR WHICH I WAS APPOINTED A PREACHER AND APOSTLE AND TEACHER,

The original Greek word used for Preacher speaks of a Herald, one who announces news, and in the case of Paul's heralding, IT WAS THE GOSPEL OF JESUS CHRIST.

Other than understanding the original meaning of the word Preacher, we must realize Paul planted New Assemblies of Believers, and for the unsaved to grasp PAUL'S profound (deep, reflective, weighty) APOSTOLIC DOCTRINE AND TEACHING, THE UNSAVED HAD TO BE BORN OF THE SPIRIT. The Holy Scripture teaches that man must be born of The Spirit first, for the things of God are not naturally discerned. Instead, the Spirit discerns them (see John 3:1-6: 1Cor 2:14). Considering the two above Scripture references, there was a definite chronological order of ministry. As a Herald (Evangelist), Paul first preached The Gospel. Thus, the non-converted were Born of The Spirit. Therefore, the new converts then had the help of The Holy Spirit to grasp Paul's Governmental Ministry as an Apostle and had the Spirit's help to understand and practice the teachings of Paul, the Evangelist, the Apostle, and the Teacher.

I believe churches that do not have a Fathering program (and I am not talking about a Bible College or Bible School program, for the simple fact that one is a theory, and the other is practical) have a limited future. It is inevitable (predictable). Many congregants will leave and join other Local Churches or Denominational Churches.

The future of every Local Church DOES NOT DEPEND SOLELY ON THEIR VISION. Why do I say that? For the simple fact, what is the use of the Vision if there is no workforce to hasten (advance, speed up) the Vision of the house? The Vision will not come to fruition (completion) unless there exists in the Local Church and Denomination) a solid Fathering program, which must have the human resources and be filled with The Holy Spirit not only to enhance (improve) but to fulfill the vision as well.

THE IMPORTANCE OF THE FATHERING PROGRAMME

Within all Local Churches, there are separate facets of ministry (many types). However, all these ministries make up the ministry's total. Therefore, when ministries are set in order, prayed for, and financed, they will work effectively towards the culmination (result) of the Vision of The Local Church and Denominations.

Local Independent Churches and Denominations see the different types of ministries in The Local Church and the Denomination as DEPARTMENTS (sections, subdivisions, divisions, branches). Words are powerful, and to my mind, the word DEPARTMENT has its roots in the phrase DEPART, which means leave, proceed, start. Let us resolve this gross mistake in The Church and see MINISTRY AS MINISTRY. THE SUNDAY SCHOOL IS NOT A DEPARTMENT. IT IS A VITAL PART OF THE MINISTRY OF THE CHURCH. THE YOUTH GROUP IS NOT A DEPARTMENT. IT IS A VITAL PART OF THE ALL-INCLUSIVE MINISTRY OF THE CHURCH. THE EVANGELICAL OUTREACH PROGRAMME IS NOT A DEPARTMENT. IT IS A VITAL INTEGRAL ASPECT (CHARACTERISTIC, FEATURE, FACET) OF THE VISION OF THE LOCAL CHURCH AND DENOMINATION.

To simplify the various types of all the ministries in The Local Church and Denomination, though different in the house, every specific ministry is a SEGMENT (a slice, a substantial part) of ONE VISION, which is

expressed to meet the needs of the various age groups, nationalities, and cultures, which is The Local Church.

Each of these various segments complements each other and thus completes each other. They complement each other to complete THE VISION OF THE HOUSE. Though there are diverse ministries and Ascended Gifts in the house, there is ONE VISION. THE IMPORTANT QUESTION THAT FOLLOWS IS JUST WHAT IS THE ONE VISION?

ROMANS 8:29: FOR THOSE WHOM HE FOREKNEW, HE ALSO PREDESTINED TO BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON, So HE MIGHT BE THE FIRSTBORN AMONG MANY BROTHERS.

THE ULTIMATE VISION OF EVERY CHILD OF GOD, EVERY LOCAL CHURCH, AND EVERY DENOMINATION IS THAT EVERY MEMBER OF THE BODY OF CHRIST BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF JESUS CHRIST (SEEN GENESIS 1:26-27)

COMPREHENSION

- Jesus, our master, knows the hearts and intents of all men, and that is why we must consult Him earnestly in prayer and fasting when choosing Spiritual Sons.

Whenever the Ascended Gift senses The Holy Spirit impressing him on whom to Father, he must consult with the other leaders of The Church. This action safeguards the Ascended Gift of control and the possibility of being self-influenced and unknowingly influenced by other spirits. It is essential as Ascended Gifts that we follow biblical protocol (practice, procedure): LET EVERYTHING BE ESTABLISHED IN THE MOUTH OF TWO OR THREE WITNESSES (see 2 Corinthians 13:1 KJV)). The adherence to scriptural protocol in the Ascended Gift is not a law unto himself. I must mention that Paul commissioned Titus to appoint Elders in The Churches of Crete. Does this action not speak of control by Paul? The answer is most definitely no because there was no leadership in these churches that Paul and Barnabas had started. However, once Titus had set the Local Churches in order, the Local Elders would appoint more leaders in The Church as the need arose.

Spiritual Fathers are wise, and as much as they often feel the leading of The Lord to choose our Spiritual Sons. They look out for tell-tale signs that convince them they did hear from The Lord. They consider all

CHAPTER 15

DISTINCTIONS AMONG THE SPIRITUAL SONS

The Bible teaches us that our God is no respecter of persons (see Acts 10:34). He does not play the favorite game but makes distinctions. The twelve Apostles walked with Jesus for three and a half years. He shared His life with them. He withheld nothing from them. Yet on close examination of the twelve, it seemed as if there were three distinct (different groups) among The Apostles and disciples.

Nine of the twelve belonged to THE INNER CIRCLE, while the others belonged to THE INNERMOST CIRCLE, Peter, James, and John. These three went where the others could not go. They went with Jesus to The Mount of Transfiguration, into the home of Jairus and a stone's throw away from where Jesus had gone to pray in the Garden of Gethsemane, while the other Apostles were further away. They saw and heard what the others had not seen and heard. There was also THE OUTER CIRCLE. These were the seventy disciples that Jesus had sent out to preach.

The Innermost Circle of Peter, James, and John stood with Jesus on The Mount of Transfiguration. They saw the two great prophets of The Old Testament, Moses and Elijah. They saw the Deity of Jesus break forth:

Jesus raised three people from the dead: The only son of a widow from Nain (Lk 7:11-14), the daughter of the religious leader Jairus (Mk 5:22-43), and Lazarus (Jn 11:1-45). Only Peter, James, and John saw all three wondrous miracles. The other nine Apostles did not enter the home of Jairus. They were outside of the house of Jairus.

Jesus poured out His heart to his Father in The Garden of Gethsemane. In The Garden of Gethsemane, Jesus prepared Himself for the horror of the Crucifixion. Eleven of The Apostles went with Jesus. However, only in The Innermost Circle Peter, James, and John were invited to go further

with Jesus into The Garden of Gethsemane. They were the closest to Jesus in His hour of travail.

Then Jesus went with them to a garden called Gethsemane and told his disciples:

MATHEW 36: 36-47: STAY HERE WHILE I GO OVER THERE AND PRAY.” TAKING ALONG PETER AND THE TWO SPIRITUAL SONS OF ZEBEDEE, HE PLUNGED INTO AN AGONIZING SORROW. THEN HE SAID, “THIS SORROW IS CRUSHING MY LIFE OUT. STAY HERE AND KEEP VIGIL WITH ME.” Then, GOING A LITTLE AHEAD, HE FELL ON HIS FACE, PRAYING, “MY FATHER, IF THERE IS ANY WAY, GET ME OUT OF THIS. BUT PLEASE, NOT WHAT I WANT. YOU, WHAT DO YOU WANT? “WHEN HE CAME BACK TO HIS DISCIPLES, HE FOUND THEM SOUND ASLEEP. HE SAID TO PETER, “CAN’T YOU STICK IT OUT WITH ME A SINGLE HOUR? STAY ALERT; BE IN PRAYER SO YOU DO NOT WANDER INTO TEMPTATION, EVEN KNOWING YOU ARE DANGER. A PART OF YOU IS EAGER AND READY FOR ANYTHING IN GOD. BUT THERE IS ANOTHER PART AS LAZY AS AN OLD DOG SLEEPING BY THE FIRE.

“HE THEN LEFT THEM A SECOND TIME. AGAIN, HE PRAYED, “MY FATHER, IF THERE IS NO OTHER WAY THAN THIS, DRINKING THIS CUP TO THE DREGS, I’M READY. DO IT YOUR WAY. “WHEN HE CAME BACK, HE AGAIN FOUND THEM SOUND ASLEEP. THEY COULD NOT KEEP THEIR EYES OPEN. THIS TIME HE LET THEM SLEEP ON AND WENT BACK A THIRD TIME TO PRAY, GOING OVER THE SAME GROUND ONE LAST TIME. WHEN HE CAME BACK THE NEXT TIME, HE SAID, “ARE YOU GOING TO SLEEP ON AND MAKE A NIGHT OF IT? MY TIME IS UP. THE SPIRITUAL SON OF MAN IS ABOUT TO BE HANDED OVER TO THE HANDS OF SINNERS. GET UP! LET US GET GOING! MY BETRAYER IS HERE.” THE WORDS WERE BARELY OUT OF HIS MOUTH WHEN JUDAS (THE ONE FROM THE TWELVE) SHOWED UP, AND WITH HIM, A GANG OF THE HIGH PRIESTS AND RELIGIOUS LEADERS BRANDISHING SWORDS AND CLUBS.

Of the nine Apostles of The Inner Circle, one failed The Lord, and the other eight, as close as they were to The Lord, could not go all the way with The Lord. Only Peter, James, and John (the innermost circle) could go further and experience the brokenness of Jesus.

A wise Father will survey The Local Church and categorize it into three groups:

THE OUTER CIRCLE: THE DISCIPLES

THE INNER CIRCLE: THE NINE APOSTLES

THE INNERMOST CIRCLE: PETER, JAMES, AND JOHN

THE OUTER CIRCLE

All Local Churches have Non-MEMBERS. These Non-Members attend Church services regularly but have not received The Right Hand of Fellowship. Many Church attendees are Born-Again and are those saints of God who have yet not committed themselves to the authority and vision of The Local Church. In most instances, attendees are disillusioned Christians who have left their previous Churches because of various issues and problems with their last Local Churches. Some might even tithe regularly to The Local Church but have not sought The Local Church for The Right Hand of Fellowship.

With the above in mind, the wise Father will not choose his Spiritual Sons from The Outer Circle unless they have received The Right Hand of Fellowship. Furthermore, be it that they had left their earlier Churches under discipline, they must serve their time of disciplinary action in their newfound Local Church. After their corrective action, they are inducted into their new Local Church with the leadership's blessing and receive the Right Hand of Fellowship. They thus are eligible for training in the Spiritual Sonship Training Program.

THE INNER-CIRCLE

All those who have taken The Right Hand of Fellowship and faithfully tithe and attend all duly called services and are submissive to The Local Church Leadership is considered a substantial part of THE INNER CIRCLE and is therefore eligible for the training of Spiritual Sons.

THE INNERMOST CIRCLE

Those given The Right Hand of Fellowship, who serve The Local Church faithfully and have gone the extra mile time repeatedly in helping The Local Church, are an integral part of The Local Church and have shown

a Submissive and Teachable Spirit. The wise Father will always draw his Leadership and Spiritual Sons from this group.

SPIRITUAL APPLICATIONS

- Although God is no respecter of persons, he does choose his friends. Abraham, the Jewish patriarch, was the only friend of God. Similarly, God chooses his Ministers of The Gospel. Ascended Gifts play a dominant and responsible role in developing God's choices in choosing his servants whom God had chosen before the foundation of the world.
- The Innermost Circle goes where others do not go. Therefore, only those who have taken the right hand of fellowship may participate in the Father and Son mentoring program.
- The Wiseman of God always divides his Church congregants into three groups and that being:
 - THE OUTER CIRCLE
 - THE INNER CIRCLE
 - THE INNERMOST CIRCLE (SPIRITUAL SONS AND FELLOW ASCENDED GIFTED MINISTERS WHO ARE A PART OF THE LEADERSHIP TEAM).
- The wise man of God will share his life and ministry with those of The Innermost Circle.
- Those who submit to the authority and vision of the local church are eligible for The Right Hand of Fellowship.
- Confirmation principles are to be employed when setting Spiritual Sons aside for ministry training.
- Extending the right hand of fellowship goes beyond membership in a Local Church or a Denomination. When Born Again, The Holy Spirit baptizes the converts into The Body of Christ, thus making them members of the universal body of Christ. In simple terms, the Born-Again convert is a bona fide member of the entire church recognized by Jesus, the founder and head of The Church. Local Church leaders and Denomination leaders give the right hand of fellowship to members of The Body of Christ to express their God-given ministries (see 1 Corinthians 12:13; Galatians).

SUMMARY

Ascended Gifts know that God had chosen his servants and handmaidens before the foundation of the world. No doubt, this places a heavy responsibility on the Ascended Gifts to discover the dear saints of God in his care whom God had chosen in eternity. How does the Ascended Gift realize who these pre-determined saints of God earmarked for the ministry? What spiritual means will he employ to discover just who are these Spiritual Sons? The classic confirmation of this great truth is the call of Jeremiah 1:5 ESV:

BEFORE I FORMED YOU IN THE WOMB, I KNEW YOU,
AND BEFORE YOU WERE BORN, I CONSECRATED YOU;
I APPOINTED YOU A PROPHET TO THE NATIONS.”

Have modern-day Ascended Gifts ever wondered why their churches have constant splits? Just who is to blame for these unwanted splits?

Be it that the dear reader is an Ascended Gift, do you fully understand the right hand of fellowship? If you do, dear man of God, your congregation will be blessed with not just you as an Ascended Gift. I believe all the Fivefold Ministry will function in your assembly to the glory of God. But, on the other hand, if we do not fully understand the seriousness of the right hand of fellowship, sadly, there will only be Deacons and Elders in the Leadership.

NOTA BENE

THE RIGHT HAND OF THE FELLOWSHIP

GALATIANS 2:9

AND WHEN JAMES AND CEPHAS AND JOHN, WHO SEEMED TO BE PILLARS,
PERCEIVED THE GRACE THAT WAS GIVEN TO ME, THEY GAVE THE RIGHT HAND OF
FELLOWSHIP TO BARNABAS AND ME, THAT WE SHOULD GO TO THE GENTILES, AND
THEY TO THE CIRCUMCISED.

CHAPTER 16 GOD'S CHOICE

Sometimes, God speaks specifically of whom He wants us to set aside for ministry. When God does this (as He had done in The Old Testament and Acts 13), we must submit to His authority and carry out His will to the letter. However, there are certain Confirmation Principles we must adopt which authenticate God's directive:

CONFIRMATION PRINCIPLES 1

No doubt, we do not act immediately. As wise Ascended Gifts, we implement the Principles of Confirmation. THE FIRST PRINCIPLE OF CONFIRMATION is verifying the source of the command. God's Word teaches that there is three Spirits operative in the world, and these function in The Body of Christ:

THE SPIRIT OF MAN

EVIL SPIRITS

THE HOLY SPIRIT

The Spirit of man operates to exalt self and not God. Evil Spirits work to glorify Satan and mislead The Church. The Holy Spirit always praises Jesus and directs The Church to God's will.

CONFIRMATION PRINCIPLE 2

Seeking counsel from other seasoned men of God:

1 CORINTHIANS 14:29: LET TWO OR THREE PROPHETS SPEAK, AND LET THE OTHERS WEIGH WHAT IS SAID.

PROVERBS 11:14: GOD'S WORD TRANSLATION: A NATION WILL FALL WHEN THERE IS NO DIRECTION, BUT WITH MANY ADVISERS, THERE IS VICTORY.

Two classic examples in The Old Testament are when servants of God are told explicitly to set men apart for ministry. These two men were Joshua and Elisha. God instructed Moses to set Joshua apart:

DEUTERONOMY 31:14: AND THE LORD SAID TO MOSES, “BEHOLD, THE DAYS APPROACH WHEN YOU MUST DIE. CALL JOSHUA AND PRESENT YOURSELVES IN THE TENT OF MEETING, THAT I MAY COMMISSION HIM.” AND MOSES AND JOSHUA WENT AND PRESENTED THEMSELVES IN THE TENT OF THE MEETING.

God instructed Elijah to set Elisha apart:

1 KINGS 19:16: AND JEHU THE SPIRITUAL SON OF NIMSHI YOU SHALL ANOINT TO BE KING OVER ISRAEL, AND ELISHA THE SPIRITUAL SON OF SHAPHAT OF ABEL-MEHOLAH YOU SHALL ANOINT TO BE PROPHET IN YOUR PLACE.

Though Moses and Elijah had received instruction from God, we must note a significant difference between the call of these two mighty men of God. Joshua was already functioning as Moses' Son and servant:

DEUTERONOMY 31:7: THEN MOSES SUMMONED JOSHUA AND SAID TO HIM IN THE SIGHT OF ALL ISRAEL, “BE STRONG AND COURAGEOUS, FOR YOU SHALL GO WITH THESE PEOPLE INTO THE LAND THAT THE LORD HAS SWORN TO THEIR SPIRITUAL FATHERS TO GIVE THEM, AND YOU SHALL PUT THEM IN POSSESSION OF IT.

DEUTERONOMY 34:9: AND JOSHUA, THE SPIRITUAL SON OF NUN, WAS FULL OF THE SPIRIT OF WISDOM, FOR MOSES HAD LAID HIS HANDS ON HIM. SO, THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL OBEYED HIM AND DID AS THE LORD HAD COMMANDED MOSES.

Moses' instruction was not to train Joshua for the ministry. Instead, it was to release him into ministry. Likewise, Elisha's anointing was not for immediate ministry. Instead, it was for training in the ministry:

1 KINGS 19:15-21: AND THE LORD SAID TO HIM, “GO, RETURN ON YOUR WAY TO THE WILDERNESS OF DAMASCUS. AND WHEN YOU ARRIVE, YOU SHALL ANOINT HAZAEL TO BE KING OVER SYRIA. ¹⁶ AND JEHU, THE SPIRITUAL SON OF NIMSHI, YOU SHALL ANOINT TO BE KING OVER ISRAEL, AND ELISHA, THE SPIRITUAL SON OF SHAPHAT OF ABEL-MEHOLAH, YOU SHALL ANOINT TO BE PROPHET IN YOUR PLACE. ¹⁷ AND THE ONE WHO ESCAPES FROM THE SWORD OF HAZAEL SHALL JEHU PUT TO DEATH, AND THE ONE WHO ESCAPES FROM THE SWORD OF JEHU SHALL ELISHA PUT TO DEATH. ¹⁸ YET I WILL LEAVE

SEVEN THOUSAND IN ISRAEL, ALL THE KNEES THAT HAVE NOT BOWED TO BAAL, AND EVERY MOUTH THAT HAS NOT KISSED HIM.”¹⁹ SO HE DEPARTED FROM THERE AND FOUND ELISHA, THE SPIRITUAL SON OF SHAPHAT, WHO WAS PLOWING WITH TWELVE YOKE OF OXEN IN FRONT OF HIM, AND HE WAS WITH THE TWELFTH. So, ELIJAH PASSED BY HIM AND CAST HIS CLOAK UPON HIM. ²⁰ AND HE LEFT THE OXEN AND RAN AFTER ELIJAH AND SAID, “LET ME KISS MY FATHER AND MY MOTHER, AND THEN I WILL FOLLOW YOU.” AND HE SAID TO HIM, “GO BACK AGAIN, FOR WHAT HAVE I DONE TO YOU?” ²¹ AND HE RETURNED FROM FOLLOWING HIM AND TOOK THE YOKE OF OXEN AND SACRIFICED THEM AND BOILED THEIR FLESH WITH THE YOKES OF THE OXEN AND GAVE IT TO THE PEOPLE, AND THEY ATE. THEN HE AROSE AND WENT AFTER ELIJAH AND ASSISTED HIM.

CONFIRMATION PRINCIPLE 3

Seeking God’s approval is essential. A classic example of setting men aside as Ascended Gifts (although our topic deals with SPIRITUAL SONS) is recorded in Acts 13. The Holy Spirit instructs The Church of Antioch to set Barnabas and Saul apart for their respective ministries. However, though The Holy Spirit gave the instruction, we must note that The Holy Spirit used either one of the Prophets or one of the Teachers present at that Worship Service to voice the Prophecy. Therefore, all present changed The Worship Service to a Prayer Service or, better still, a Confirmation service. Those present at this service were seasoned men of God, and therefore they judged the instruction spoken, whether the source of the instruction was from The Holy Spirit, the spirit of man, or evil spirits. Once they prayed and agreed it was indeed an instruction from The Holy Spirit, they changed the service from a Prayer Service to an Ordination Service. Finally, the Prophets and the Teachers laid hands on the two men of God and sent them forth as Apostles to the nations.

It is good that we seek confirmation from other men of God (those within our Local Church). However, we must confirm with prayer and joint approval whatever counsel is received.

SUMMARY

- When God sets men aside for ministry, we must cooperate with God by developing their ministries.
- The spirit of man exalts self.

CHAPTER 17
THE LAW OF ASSOCIATION

PROVERBS 13:20

WHOEVER WALKS WITH THE WISE BECOMES WISE,
BUT THE COMPANION OF FOOLS WILL SUFFER HARM.

Often words are taken for granted, and therefore we do not understand the full significance of what is intended. Students of The Word of God convey the truth of God's Word to others. Therefore, we must not only do word studies on the original languages of the Bible, Hebrew, and Greek but also study our personal spoken language.

In developing our ministries as Spiritual Fathers, we must fully understand the significance of THE LAW OF ASSOCIATION. Evidence that they went with Paul on his missionary journeys and the mere fact that out of all those who went with Paul on his missionary journeys, only Titus and Timothy are called Spiritual Sons.

Spiritual Fathers must fully understand The Law of Association and its relationship to Spiritual Impartation. Too often, Spiritual Fathers overemphasize the impartation of themselves. However, we must admit that no matter who we are, no matter how great and renowned our ministries are, we are imperfect in character, and there are flaws in our ministries.

Spiritual Sons' greatest impartation from their Spiritual Fathers is THE PRESENCE AND CHARACTER OF OUR GOD. Therefore, spiritual Fathers must have an intimate and personal relationship with God. Paul, the Apostle to the Gentiles, said this of himself:

GALATIANS 2:20: I HAVE BEEN CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST. IT IS NO LONGER I
WHO LIVE, BUT CHRIST LIVES IN ME. AND THE LIFE I NOW LIVE IN THE

FLESH, I LIVE BY FAITH IN THE SON OF GOD, WHO LOVED ME AND GAVE HIMSELF FOR ME.

Spiritual Fathers must die to themselves. Paul knew of the frailty of man, and no wonder he resounded these words:

ROMANS 7:18: FOR I KNOW NOTHING GOOD LIVES IN ME, THAT IS, IN MY FLESH [MY HUMAN NATURE, MY WORLDLINESS— MY SINFUL CAPACITY]. FOR THE WILLINGNESS [TO DO GOOD] IS PRESENT IN ME, BUT THE DOING OF GOOD IS NOT.

Spiritual Fathers must believe in THE LAW OF ASSOCIATION. Like Paul, we must realize that there is no good thing in all of us (see Romans 7:18); therefore, we must have an intimate ongoing relationship with The Lord. Through worship, praise, fasting, prayer, intense reading, and studying and application of The Word of God, we put on Christ. Other than Jesus Christ, to my mind, Paul was the wisest SPIRITUAL FATHER. He knew that his relationship with God was of paramount importance not just for his spiritual development but also for the spiritual growth of his Spiritual Sons. No wonder Paul, through the leading of The Holy Spirit, penned these wise words:

1 CORINTHIANS 11:1: BE IMITATORS OF ME, AS I AM OF CHRIST.

Apostle Paul knew that he was a living epistle (open letter) to his fellow man and his Spiritual Sons. Therefore, he could confidently say to his Spiritual Sons that they imitate him as he follows Christ in ministry and Christian conduct. The Law of Association ensures a definite spiritual impartation and character. The more time our Spiritual Sons spend with Christ and their Spiritual Father, the more Christlike character develops.

Elisha, the faithful servant of Elijah, saw several miracles performed by his master over the years. But other than seeing the supernatural, he noted Elijah's Godly life. His miracles and Godly lifestyle made an indelible impression on Elisha, and when it was time for his master to be with God, he was precise in what he asked of his master:

2 KINGS 2:9: NASB: WHEN THEY HAD CROSSED OVER, ELIJAH SAID TO ELISHA, "ASK WHAT I SHALL DO FOR YOU BEFORE I AM TAKEN FROM YOU."

AND ELISHA SAID, "PLEASE, LET A DOUBLE PORTION OF YOUR SPIRIT BE UPON ME."

Elijah, an influential Father, effectively trained his son. The Law of Association worked perfectly between the Father and his Son. Many might want to consider the evidence that proves it worked perfectly. The fact that Elisha asked meant for a double portion of Elijah's spirit is clear that Elijah successfully trained Elisha for ministry. Whenever the Spiritual Son wants to be like his Spiritual Father, it is clear our work is practical and is God-like for the betterment of humanity,

Jesus spent only three and a half years with His Apostles. Considering the duration that Moses trained Joshua (forty years) and Elisha trained Elijah (six to ten years). Thus, the time Jesus spent with His Apostles was minimal. And yet of the twelve men, He prepared for the ministry, eleven were sent forth into the world to convert the world:

MATHEW 28:18-20: JESUS CAME AND SAID TO THEM, "ALL AUTHORITY IN HEAVEN AND ON EARTH HAS BEEN GIVEN TO ME. ¹⁹ GO THEREFORE AND MAKE DISCIPLES OF ALL NATIONS, BAPTIZING THEM IN^[A] THE NAME OF THE FATHER AND THE SPIRITUAL SON AND THE HOLY SPIRIT, ²⁰ TEACHING THEM TO OBSERVE ALL THAT I HAVE COMMANDED YOU. AND BEHOLD, I AM WITH YOU ALWAYS, TO THE END OF THE AGE."

Every action has a reaction. After Joshua spent forty years with Moses, what was his reaction? After Elisha spent six to ten years with Elijah, what was the response? After the Apostles spent three and a half years with Jesus, what was their reaction? After Titus and Timothy spent several years with Paul, what was their response?

The reaction was the intention and purpose of The Law of Association. So, they were released into their ministry. Moses, the Spiritual Father of Joshua, had the privilege and honor of releasing Joshua into his ministry:

DEUTERONOMY 31:7: THEN MOSES SUMMONED JOSHUA AND SAID TO HIM IN THE SIGHT OF ALL ISRAEL, "BE STRONG AND COURAGEOUS, FOR YOU SHALL GO WITH THESE PEOPLE INTO THE LAND THAT THE LORD HAS SWORN TO THEIR SPIRITUAL FATHERS TO GIVE THEM, AND YOU SHALL PUT THEM IN

POSSESSION OF IT.

DEUTERONOMY 34:9: AND JOSHUA, THE SPIRITUAL SON OF NUN, WAS FULL OF THE SPIRIT OF WISDOM, FOR MOSES HAD LAID HIS HANDS ON HIM. SO, THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL OBEYED HIM AND DID AS THE LORD HAD COMMANDED MOSES.

Elijah, the Spiritual Father, had the privilege and honor of releasing his Spiritual Son Elisha into his ministry:

2 KINGS 2:8-17: ⁸ NOW ELIJAH TOOK HIS MANTLE, ROLLED *IT* UP, AND STRUCK THE WATER; AND IT WAS DIVIDED THIS WAY AND THAT SO THAT THE TWO OF THEM CROSSED OVER ON DRY GROUND.⁹ AND SO IT WAS WHEN THEY HAD CROSSED OVER THAT ELIJAH SAID TO ELISHA, “ASK! WHAT MAY I DO FOR YOU BEFORE I AM TAKEN AWAY FROM YOU?” ELISHA SAID, “PLEASE LET A DOUBLE PORTION OF YOUR SPIRIT BE UPON ME.”¹⁰ SO HE SAID, “YOU HAVE ASKED A HARD THING. *NEVERTHELESS*, IF YOU SEE ME *WHEN I AM* TAKEN FROM YOU, IT SHALL BE SO FOR YOU. STILL, IF NOT, IT SHALL NOT BE *SO*.”¹¹ THEN IT HAPPENED, AS THEY CONTINUED AND TALKED, THAT SUDDENLY A CHARIOT OF FIRE *APPEARED* WITH HORSES OF FIRE AND SEPARATED THE TWO OF THEM, AND ELIJAH WENT UP BY A WHIRLWIND INTO HEAVEN.¹² AND ELISHA SAW *IT*, AND HE CRIED OUT, “MY FATHER, MY FATHER, THE CHARIOT OF ISRAEL AND ITS HORSEMEN!” SO, HE SAW HIM NO MORE. AND HE TOOK HOLD OF HIS CLOTHES AND TORE THEM INTO TWO PIECES.¹³ HE ALSO TOOK UP THE MANTLE OF ELIJAH THAT HAD FALLEN FROM HIM AND WENT BACK AND STOOD BY THE BANK OF THE JORDAN.¹⁴ THEN HE TOOK THE MANTLE OF ELIJAH THAT HAD FALLEN FROM HIM, STRUCK THE WATER, AND SAID, “WHERE *IS* THE LORD GOD OF ELIJAH?” AND WHEN HE ALSO HAD STRUCK THE WATER, IT WAS DIVIDED THIS WAY AND THAT; AND ELISHA CROSSED OVER.¹⁵ NOW, WHEN THE SONS OF THE PROPHETS WHO *WERE* FROM^[A] JERICHO SAW HIM, THEY SAID, “THE SPIRIT OF ELIJAH RESTS ON ELISHA.” AND THEY CAME TO MEET HIM AND BOWED TO THE GROUND BEFORE HIM.¹⁶ THEN THEY SAID TO HIM, “LOOK NOW, THERE ARE FIFTY STRONG MEN WITH YOUR SERVANTS. PLEASE LET THEM GO AND SEARCH FOR YOUR MASTER, LEST PERHAPS THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD HAS TAKEN HIM UP AND CAST HIM UPON SOME MOUNTAIN OR

INTO SOME VALLEY."AND HE SAID, "YOU SHALL NOT SEND ANYONE."¹⁷ BUT WHEN THEY URGED HIM TILL HE WAS ASHAMED, HE SAID, "SEND *THEM!*" THEREFORE, THEY SENT FIFTY MEN, AND THEY SEARCHED FOR THREE DAYS BUT DID NOT FIND HIM

It is interesting to note how The Message Bible phrases Elisha's request: " And The MKJV is slightly different: "PLEASE LET A DOUBLE YOUR LIFE REPEATED IN MY LIFE." The KJV, NKJV PORTION OF YOUR SPIRIT BE UPON ME." Elijah, as a Father, had succeeded in perfecting his son for the ministry. His Son wanted a double portion of his Spiritual Father's spirit. Strange as it may seem, he asked for a double portion of God's Spirit that rested upon Elijah. He chose his words wisely.

The Jamison-Fausset-Brown Commentary sheds illumination on Elisha's request:

LET A DOUBLE PORTION OF THY SPIRIT BE UPON ME--THIS REQUEST WAS NOT, AS IS COMMONLY SUPPOSED, FOR THE POWER OF WORKING MIRACLES EXCEEDING THE MAGNITUDE AND NUMBER OF HIS MASTER'S, NOR DOES IT MEAN A HIGHER ENDOWMENT OF THE PROPHETIC SPIRIT; FOR ELISHA WAS NEITHER SUPERIOR TO NOR PERHAPS EQUALLY GREAT WITH, HIS PREDECESSOR. BUT THE PHRASE "A DOUBLE PORTION" WAS APPLIED TO THE FIRSTBORN [DEUTERONOMY 21:17], AND THEREFORE ELISHA'S REQUEST WAS TO BE HEIR TO THE PROPHETIC OFFICE AND GIFTS OF HIS MASTER.

Adam Clark, the 19th Century Methodist theologian, makes similar remarks:

A DOUBLE PORTION OF THY SPIRIT BE UPON ME.] THIS IS ABOUT THE LAW, DEUTERONOMY 21:17: HE SHALL ACKNOWLEDGE THE FIRST-BORN, BY GIVING HIM A DOUBLE PORTION OF ALL THAT HE HATH-THE RIGHT OF THE FIRST-BORN IS HIS. ELISHA CONSIDERED HIMSELF THE ONLY CHILD OR FIRSTBORN OF ELIJAH, AS THE DISCIPLES OF EMINENT TEACHERS WERE CALLED THEIR CHILDREN, SO HERE HE CLAIMS A DOUBLE PORTION OF HIS SPIRITUAL INFLUENCE, ANY OTHER DISCIPLES COMING IN FOR A SINGLE SHARE ONLY. SPIRITUAL SONS OF THE PROPHETS MEAN NO MORE THAN THE DISCIPLES OR SCHOLARS OF THE PROPHETS. LAW, DEUTERONOMY 21:17: HE

SHALL ACKNOWLEDGE THE FIRST-BORN, BY GIVING HIM A DOUBLE PORTION OF ALL THAT HE HATH-THE RIGHT OF THE FIRST-BORN IS HIS. ELISHA CONSIDERED HIMSELF THE ONLY CHILD OR FIRSTBORN OF ELIJAH, AS THE DISCIPLES OF EMINENT TEACHERS WERE CALLED THEIR CHILDREN, SO HERE HE CLAIMS A DOUBLE PORTION OF HIS SPIRITUAL INFLUENCE, ANY OTHER DISCIPLES COMING IN FOR A SINGLE SHARE ONLY. SPIRITUAL SONS OF THE PROPHETS MEAN NO MORE THAN THE DISCIPLES OR SCHOLARS OF THE PROPHETS.

John Wesley sheds further light on the request:

A DOUBLE PORTION-OR, RATHER, DOUBLE TO WHAT THE REST OF THE SPIRITUAL SONS OF THE PROPHETS RECEIVE AT THY REQUEST. SO, HE ALLUDES TO THE DOUBLE PORTION OF THE FIRSTBORN, DEUT 21:17. BUT THOUGH ELISHA DESIRED NO MORE, YET GOD GAVE HIM MORE THAN HE DESIRED OR EXPECTED, AND HE SEEMS TO HAVE HAD A GREATER PORTION OF THE GIFTS OF GOD'S SPIRIT THAN EVEN ELIJAH HAD.

Charles Spurgeon, *The Baptist Preacher*, makes an excellent summary of the request:

HE FELT THE DIFFICULTY OF SUCCEEDING SUCH A MAN AS ELIJAH AND RECKONED THAT HE WOULD NEED A DOUBLE MEASURE OF GRACE TO FOLLOW IN HIS FOOTSTEPS. HIS REQUEST SHOWS HIS HEART WAS IN HIS LIFEWORK, AND HE HAD ABANDONED EVERY SELFISH DESIRE: HIS SOLE AMBITION WAS TO SERVE HIS GOD.

Elisha stepped into a new role in ministry. He was no longer a Spiritual Son in training. Instead, he had become like Elijah, his Spiritual Father, a fully-fledged (mature) Prophet of Jehovah God, and the Spiritual Father to all the Spiritual Sons of the School of The Prophets.

His inheritance described in Deuteronomy 21:17 was not just a blessing from his SPIRITUAL FATHER. It was a GRAVE RESPONSIBILITY as well. Thus, to succeed as the new SPIRITUAL FATHER, he needed nothing less than a double portion of the anointing that rested upon his Father:

DEUTERONOMY 21:17: BUT HE SHALL ACKNOWLEDGE THE FIRSTBORN, THE SPIRITUAL SON OF THE UNLOVED, BY GIVING HIM A DOUBLE PORTION OF ALL THAT HE HAS, FOR HE IS THE FIRST FRUITS OF HIS STRENGTH. THE RIGHT OF THE FIRSTBORN IS HIS.

2 KINGS 2:15: NOW, WHEN THE SPIRITUAL SONS OF THE PROPHETS WHO WERE AT JERICO SAW HIM OPPOSITE THEM, THEY SAID, "THE SPIRIT OF ELIJAH RESTS ON ELISHA." AND THEY CAME TO MEET HIM AND BOWED TO THE GROUND BEFORE HIM.

Other than heading up The School of the Prophets, Elisha also received a double portion of the power of The Spirit of God upon Elijah. Therefore, it is not strange that on close examination of the miracles they performed through the power of God, Elisha performed precisely twice the amount that Elijah had performed. However, before listing these supernatural miracles, there are four gold nuggets we must briefly discuss:

GOLD NUGGET 1: WHENEVER SPIRITUAL FATHERS INVEST THEIR LIVES AND MINISTRY INTO THEIR SPIRITUAL SONS AND WITHHOLD NOTHING FROM THEM, THEIR SPIRITUAL SONS ALWAYS SURPASS THEM IN ALL SPHERES OF MINISTRY.

GOLD NUGGET 2: THE MERE FACT THAT SPIRITUAL SONS SURPASS THEIR SPIRITUAL FATHERS IS EVIDENT THAT THE SPIRITUAL FATHER HAD ACCOMPLISHED HIS CALLING DESCRIBED IN EPHESIANS 4:11:

FOR THE PERFECTING OF THE SAINTS,

FOR THE WORK OF THE MINISTRY AND

FOR THE EDIFICATION OF THE BODY OF CHRIST

GOLD NUGGET 3. THE GREATEST REWARD SPIRITUAL FATHERS ENJOY IS KNOWING THEIR LABOUR IS NOT IN VAIN.

GOLD NUGGET 4. WHAT YOU ASK FOR IS WHAT YOU GET.

The Dake's Annotated Reference Bible, on page 394, lists sixteen miracles that Elijah performed and thirty-two miracles Elisha performed.

ELIJAH'S SIXTEEN MIRACLES :

- 1) THREE YEARS OF DROUGHT (1KI 17:1)
- 2) FED BY RAVENS (1KI 17:2-7)
- 3) MULTIPLYING OF MEAL AND OIL (1KI 17:8-16)
- 4) RESURRECTION OF A BOY (1KI 17:17-24)
- 5) FIRE FROM HEAVEN (1KI 18:30-40)
- 6) RAIN AFTER THREE AND A HALF YEARS (1KI 18:41-45)
- 7) THIRTY-MILE FOOT RACE (1KI 18:46)
- 8) ANGELIC FOOD CAUSES SUPERNATURAL STRENGTH (1KI 18:46)
- 9) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (1KI 21:17-24)
- 10) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (1KI 2:28-29)
- 11) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (1CHR 2:12-15)
- 12) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (2KI 1 :3-8)
- 13) FIRE FROM HEAVEN (2KI 1:9-10)
- 14) FIRE FROM HEAVEN (2KI 1:11-12)
- 15) DRYING UP OF JORDAN (2KI 2:7-8)
- 16) IMPARTING A DOUBLE PORTION OF HIS SPIRIT TO ELISHA

ELISHA'S THIRTY-TWO MIRACLES

- 1) DRYING UP OF THE JORDAN (2KI 2:13-15)
- 2) HEALING OF THE WATERS (2KI 2:19-22)
- 3) BEARS FROM THE WOODS (2KI 2:23-25)
- 4) WATER FILLING DITCHES WITHOUT RAIN (2KI 3:16-20)
- 5) DEFEAT OF MOABITES (2KI 3:18-20)
- 6) OPTICAL ILLUSION (2KI 3:21-23)

- 7) INCREASE OF WIDOW'S OIL (2KI 4:1-7)
- 8) BARRENNESS HEALED (2KI 4:12-17)
- 9) RESURRECTION OF A BOY (2KI 4:32-37)
- 10) POTTAGE HEALED (2KI 4:38-41)
- 11) BREAD MULTIPLIED FOR 100 MEN (2KI 4:42-44)
- 12) LEPROSY OF NAAMAN HEALED (2KI 5:1-14)
- 13) DISCERNMENT OF GEHAZI (2KI 5:25-26)
- 14) LEPROSY OF NAAMAN GIVEN TO GEHAZI (2KI 5:27)
- 15) MAKING IRON TO SWIM (2KI 6:1-7)
- 16) REVEALING WAR SECRETS (2KI 6:8-10)
- 17) REVEALING WAR SECRETS (2KI 6:10-12)
- 18) REVEALING WAR SECRETS AGAIN (2KI 6:12)
- 19) EYES OF SERVANT OPENED (2KI 6: 13-17)
- 20) BINDING SYRIAN ARMY (2KI 6:18)
- 21) CAPTURING THE WHOLE SYRIAN ARMY (2KI 6:19)
- 22) HEALING SYRIAN ARMY OF BLINDNESS (1KI 6:20 -23)
- 23) FOREKNOWING THE KING'S ACT (1KI 6:32-33)
- 24) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (2KI 7:1)
- 25) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (2KI 7:2)
- 26) CONFUSION OF SYRIANS (2KI 7:6-8)
- 27) SEVEN YEARS OF FAMINE (2KI 8:1-2)
- 28) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (2KI 8:7-11)
- 29) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (2KI 8:12)
- 30) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (2KI 8:13-15)

31) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (2KI 9:1-10)

32) MIRACULOUS UTTERANCE (2KI 13:14-19)

Jesus, the Spiritual Father of the Apostles, released the Apostles into their respective ministries and commanded them (and every Born-Again Child of God) to preach the glorious Gospel to all humankind:

MATHEW 28:19-20: GO THEREFORE AND MAKE DISCIPLES OF ALL NATIONS, BAPTIZING THEM IN THE NAME OF THE FATHER AND OF THE SON AND THE HOLY SPIRIT, ²⁰TEACHING THEM TO OBSERVE ALL I HAVE COMMANDED YOU. AND BEHOLD, I AM WITH YOU ALWAYS, TO THE END OF THE AGE.

Paul, the Spiritual Father of Timothy, also had the privilege and honor of releasing his Spiritual Son into his ministry:

2 TIMOTHY 1:6: FOR THIS REASON, I REMIND YOU TO FAN INTO FLAME THE GIFT OF GOD, WHICH IS IN YOU THROUGH THE LAYING ON OF MY HANDS,

Paul also released Titus, the other Spiritual Son of Paul, into ministry. This is clear when we consider Titus 1:5 ESV:

“I LEFT YOU IN CHARGE IN CRETE, SO YOU COULD COMPLETE WHAT I LEFT HALF-DONE. APPOINT LEADERS IN EVERY TOWN ACCORDING TO MY INSTRUCTIONS.”

As a Spiritual Son, Titus could not carry out the command that Paul gave him. Only Governing Elders (Ascended Gifts) could perform such a task. With that in mind, we conclude that Titus was already released into Ascended Gifted Ministry as a Governing Elder.

SPIRITUAL APPLICATIONS

1

CHRIST-LIKE FRIENDS

The Word of God safeguards the Spiritual Father’s teachings and influence. Therefore, the Father must influence his Son to befriend Christian brethren of high moral standards, strong faith in The Lord, and unashamed of The Gospel. No one is an island. SPIRITUAL SONS need good Christian company. SERVANTS OF GOD COMPLEMENT EACH OTHER TO COMPLETE EACH OTHER (a quote from Pastor T Jakes).

2

LIVING EPISTLES

Spiritual Fathers must realize they cannot give their Spiritual Sons that they do not have. As much as we would teach and take our SPIRITUAL SONS on practical preaching exercises and yet not exhibit the character of Jesus, our labor would be in vain. Paul, the Apostle Peter, and the other Foundational Apostles, as much as they taught The Word to their Spiritual Sons and took them on practical ministry expeditions, constantly portrayed Jesus in their dealings with their fellow man. These men of God were as Living Epistles read and known by all men. What they preached, they lived. No wonder Paul could encourage his Spiritual Sons to imitate the Ascended Gifted servants as they imitated Jesus and the Godly servants of The Lord:

2 THESSALONIANS 3:7: FOR YOU YOURSELVES KNOW HOW YOU OUGHT TO IMITATE US BECAUSE WE WERE NOT IDLE WHEN WE WERE WITH YOU, ⁸ NOR DID WE EAT ANYONE'S BREAD WITHOUT PAYING FOR IT, BUT WITH TOIL AND LABOR WE WORKED NIGHT AND DAY, THAT WE, MIGHT NOT BE A BURDEN TO ANY OF YOU.

3

THE SPIRITUAL SON MUST OUTGROW THE FATHER

One of the greatest joys a Father can experience in his relationship with his Spiritual Son is when the Spiritual Son desires to be like his Father. Elisha wanted a double portion of his Spiritual Father's anointing and was told it was challenging to impart; nevertheless, Elisha had to focus on what was about to happen. Finally, a chariot of fire took Elijah to heaven, and Elijah left his cloak behind for his Spiritual Son. This was Elijah's blessing toward his Spiritual Son, Elisha.

The cloak of Elijah was no ordinary covering of the body. It was not just to keep Elijah warm. This was a special cloak worn by the Prophets of Jehovah God, made of sheepskin. The wearing of the unique coat signified the Office of The Prophet of God. Elijah, commissioning (appointing) Elisha, left his cloak (mantle) for Elisha, who tore his clothes and clothed himself with the mantle of Elijah. This unique action was a prophetic statement that Elisha was now a Prophet likened unto Elijah (see 1Kings 19:3; 1Samuel 15:27). It is not surprising when Elisha saw

Elijah transported into Heaven that he tore his clothes and put on the cloak (the mantle) of Elijah.

This was a special day in the life of Elisha, The Spiritual Son of his Father Elijah. I am of persuasion (subject to judgment) that this was the ordination and releasement of Elisha as God's Prophet to the nation of Israel.

In the ordination and releasement of Elisha as God's Prophet to Israel, God leaves no stone unturned. It has always been my sincere belief that no one's calling, ordination, and releasement of God's Ascended Gifted Ministries is ever private. Considering the call, the ordination and releasement of ministry are never secret. It is not a private matter. It never takes place privately. God's declaration of His servants is always made in public. What happened on the other side of the Jordan River was seen by The School of The Prophets. When Joshua was set apart by Moses, it took place amid the congregation. When Paul and Barnabas were sent forth as Apostles, it took place in a Leadership Worship Prayer Meeting. After the move of The Holy Spirit, the service became an Ordination and Releasement Service. The Elders ordained even Timothy. I say all this because too many saints of God have taken the ministry upon themselves. Many have gone as far as splitting Congregations and starting so-called new Churches. The New Testament speaks against this:

ROMANS 15:20: AND THUS, I MAKE MY AMBITION TO PREACH THE GOSPEL, NOT WHERE CHRIST HAS ALREADY BEEN NAMED, LEST I BUILD ON SOMEONE ELSE'S FOUNDATION.

4

APPRENTICESHIPS

I am also of the Biblical persuasion that all men of God to be in authority as servants and Ascended Gifts must serve as Spiritual Sons in a local Church. In our day, too many are taking the ministry upon themselves. So much is placed on academic achievements. Yes, we must study to show ourselves approved unto God. However, it is not only our Diplomas, Degrees that give us the right to become Ministers of The Gospel. We must serve an Apprenticeship with a wise, Ascended, Gifted Father as well.). Fatherhood and Sonship relationship is essential. We believe in Bible College training. However, it is not all in all. All our

certificates, Degrees, and Doctorates do not qualify us for Ascended Gifted Ministry. We must also serve our time as SPIRITUAL SONS under experienced holy men of God. Ascended Gifted Ministers have the God-given ability and mandate to impart not just the knowledge of God's Word; they will also hand-train leaders for the present day and future in Preaching and establishing The Kingdom of God. Ascended Gifted Ministers impart and instill confidence in the mind and spirit of their Spiritual Sons. They awake the call of God echoed by God before the foundation of the world.

5

ASCENDED GIFTED SPIRITUAL FATHERS PRODUCE ASCENDED SPIRITUAL SONS

Just as Elisha wanted a double portion of his Spiritual Father's anointing, so must our Spiritual Sons want a double portion of our spirit. Elijah said it was challenging to impart what Elisha had asked for, yet Elisha focused on his Spiritual Father. This is significant because the Spiritual Son's attention must be riveted on the Father. Spiritual Sons must miss nothing of the Father and his Godly actions. Spiritual Sons are molded by the happenings and examples of the Spiritual Fathers:

READER'S NOTES

CHAPTER 18
THE THREE PRINCIPLES FOR SUCCESSFUL SPIRITUAL
PARENTING

One of the greatest blessings afforded to humankind is the reproduction of self. But unfortunately, many people do not understand this great privilege. Therefore, we appreciate it more readily and enthusiastically when we consider the creation of man:

GENESIS 1:26 MKJV: AND GOD SAID, LET US MAKE MAN IN OUR IMAGE, AFTER OUR LIKENESS. AND LET THEM HAVE DOMINION OVER THE FISH OF THE SEA, AND THE FOWL OF THE HEAVENS, AND OVER THE CATTLE, AND ALL THE EARTH, AND OVER ALL THE CREEPERS CREEPING ON THE EARTH.

Man is created in the very image and likeness of God. Man is a replica (model, duplicate) of God. However, some may say that this is farfetched. However, this is not the case in word studies on image and likeness. In the original Old Testament language, the Hebrew words for image and likeness are:

The Strong's Hebrew Concordance (06754) explains tselem as follows:

TO SHADE; A PHANTOM, I.E. (FIGURATIVELY) ILLUSION, RESEMBLANCE; HENCE, A REPRESENTATIVE FIGURE, ESPECIALLY AN IDOL: --IMAGE, VAIN SHEW

The Strong's Hebrew Concordance (01823) explains d@muwth as follows:

RESEMBLANCE; CONCRETELY, MODEL SHAPE; ADVERBIALY, LIKE: --FASHION (-NESS, AS), MANNER, SIMILITUDE

With the above explanation of the two Hebrew words in mind, it was as if God was looking into a mirror when His wondrous creation laid before Him. So, God saw Himself in Adam. This wonder of wonders is afforded to man in the reproduction of humankind:

GENESIS 1:28 AMP: AND GOD BLESSED THEM [GRANTING THEM CERTAIN AUTHORITY] AND SAID TO THEM, "BE FRUITFUL, MULTIPLY, AND FILL THE

EARTH, AND SUBJUGATE IT [PUTTING IT UNDER YOUR POWER]; AND RULE OVER (DOMINATE) THE FISH OF THE SEA, THE BIRDS OF THE AIR, AND EVERY LIVING THING THAT MOVES UPON THE EARTH.”

When I consider this wonderful blessing of God, I am of the personal persuasion that one of my greatest blessings ever was to reproduce after my kind, which is not just in the natural but in the spirit. When I look at my three beautiful and respectful daughters (now Yolanda Penelope Choromanski, Evelyn Maud Covington, and Michelle Anne Flinn), I am amazed that there is a remarkable resemblance between my dear beautiful wife (Dolores) and myself in each of them. It is like looking into a mirror; even their actions are like my wife's and mine.

Over the years, our Good Lord taught my wife and me, The Three Principles for Successful Parenting, not that we were the perfect parents. But, by God's grace, we employed these Three Principles of Parenting.

PROTECTION

PROVISION

PROMOTION

PROTECTION

How did we protect our children, and from what did we protect them? One of the most significant influences ever is THE LAW OF ASSOCIATION. We helped our children choose their FRIENDS. We kept them away from bad company. We decided what TV programs they could watch. We never just sent them to Sunday School and The Worship Service; we took them to every Church service and taught them how to participate in the services.

PROVISION

We did not just supply food, clothing, and education. Through our lifestyle, we delivered a Godly lifestyle to the best of our ability. As best as possible, we lived a life dedicated unto God before them. Moreover, whenever we failed, we taught them the power of confession and the power of forgiveness. Whenever the wife or I failed each other by showing disrespect or talking unkindly to each other, we would make sure that we would apologize in the presence of our children and, without reservation, forgive each other. This principle was undoubtedly

carried over into their walk with God; they knew that God forgave their sins the way Mommy and Daddy forgave each other.

PROMOTION

How do we know that, as parents, we have succeeded in raising our children? My dear wife always reminded me that we were not just raising our children for ourselves, for our benefit and joy, but for God, His Church, and even the world as well. No wonder she believed in discipline and correction with the rod. Though she and I were strict in punishment, there came a time in their respective life's that we had to stop using the rod and sit them down and reason with them. We had to start treating them as young adults, which we did and but by the Grace of God. We found that by doing this, there was a more incredible response to our correcting them. As we continued in this vein, we began to note that our relationship with our children grew for no more were they treating us as just parents but as their confidants and friends. They began to share most things with us. This was a sign that we, as parents, were effective. As the years went by, we further noticed that we were successful in our parenting, for they had surpassed us in many ways. Today they all are successful in their respective jobs, their homes are far better, their children are very respectful, and they are all serving The Lord. They are respected in their Churches, their workplaces, and their communities.

The question may be: "How did we promote our children? In South African culture, the coming of age as an adult is set at twenty-one years. A twenty-first-birthday key is given as a sign of reaching adulthood. It also supplies the key to the home's front door. Curfew times are then no more, and yet respectable times are expected. Decision-making is no more the prerogative of the parents. They are now privileged to choose their friends, make their own decisions, and understand that advice is freely available from Mom and Dad. My wife and I knew that our roles would change over the years. By the phenomenal Grace of our God, we were Sunday School Teachers in the early years of our salvation experience. We noted how the Sunday School was divided into various age groups and how the needs of all the different age groups differed. We implemented this essential knowledge in raising our children, and may I add. It worked wonderfully for us as parents and for our children.

Dr. Don B. Coleman, one of my Bible College teachers, used The Law of Apperception in his lectures; He had this unique way of involving students from the very onset of his teaching. Yet, we were ignorant of the subject he was teaching. He had an inspiring teaching ability that would take us from the known to the unknown. With the little, we knew he would use it as a starting point for his teaching. This was amazing, for we never felt left out of the teaching. As the teaching progressed from the known to the unknown, we felt part of the whole teaching exercise. We were on a spiritual journey from the known to the unknown. Both my wife and I adopted this method in raising our children.

I am adopting this peaching method in this teaching exercise. I use what you know and lead you to what you do not know. I have laid a foundation of teaching from my natural parenting, and from there, I take you on a spiritual journey FROM THE KNOWN to the unknown of spiritual parenting.

SPIRITUAL PROTECTION

Raising our natural children is incredibly challenging. One of our main aims in raising them is the ongoing development of good Christian character. The mind is the seedbed of all action, and therefore we must shape the thought patterns of our children. For example, my youngest granddaughter was crazy about Little Red Riding Hood, The Three Pigs, and The Big Bad Wolf. Most of her conversation and playtime with the family-centered on this fixation. I was often requested to be the big bad wolf and act out the story with her. Some parents and grandparents may say this is normal behavior for a little four-year-old. I am afraid I must disagree. Children's lives are not molded on fantasy. Their young life is to be shaped and molded by truth, and what better truth than The Word of God? And that is why I penetrated their minds and spirits with Bible character stories like Esther, Deborah, Hannah, and so many more.

I have always been persuaded to strike while the iron is hot, and by this, I mean that I chose my Spiritual Sons as soon as they committed their lives to The Lord. Good and bad habits are often formed in the stage of infancy. I knew that the younger the Spiritual Son in The Lord, the greater the prospect of success. There was less to deal with. There was less to remove from their mindsets. Therefore, from the onset of the training program, I tried to instill The Word of God in their mind. Bad influences lead to destructive thoughts, and evil thoughts lead to wrong

actions. Similarly, good consequences lead to good ideas and good action.

From day one, I renewed their mind with the Word of God. I directed their five senses toward The Word of God. Furthermore, just as my wife and I helped choose our children's friends, I helped the new convert choose good Christian friends. I introduced them to those I believed would positively influence their newfound way of life. Other than that, I showed them from The Word of God how the wrong group of even Christian friends could stunt their Christian growth.

Many so-called seasoned Christians serving The Lord for several years have a terrible effect on new Christians. One of the major faults of the so-called mature Christians is the constant complaining about the leadership of The Church, which harms the new Christian's attitude and respect toward the administration. Negativity breeds negativity. Every child of God is given a measure of faith (see Romans 12:3), and it is this measure of faith that grows by hearing The Word of God (see Romans 10:17). Saints of God who are continually murmuring, complaining, and finding fault are those that the new Christian must avoid. Just as the Law of Association works in the natural, it works in the spiritual.

The Old Testament gives us a classic example of how people of God can miss God's blessings because of being influenced negatively. God instructed Moses to send out twelve spies and that one member of each tribe to spy on the land of Canaan. Their report of the land was good; however, they said the land people were unconquerable. They described the people of the land as giants and, therefore, invincible.

NUMBERS 13:31-33: THEN THE MEN WHO HAD GONE UP WITH HIM SAID, "WE ARE NOT ABLE TO GO UP AGAINST THE PEOPLE, FOR THEY ARE STRONGER THAN WE ARE." ³²SO THEY BROUGHT TO THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL A BAD REPORT OF THE LAND THAT THEY HAD SPIED OUT, SAYING, "THE LAND, THROUGH WHICH WE HAVE GONE TO SPY IT OUT, IS A LAND THAT DEVOURS ITS INHABITANTS, AND ALL THE PEOPLE THAT WE SAW IN IT ARE OF GREAT HEIGHT. ³³AND THERE WE SAW THE NEPHILIM (THE SPIRITUAL SONS OF ANAK, WHO COME FROM THE NEPHILIM), AND WE SEEMED TO OURSELVES LIKE GRASSHOPPERS, AND SO WE SEEMED TO THEM."

As a young man growing up in Cape Town, I was constantly reminded by my two elder brothers (Domingo and Alfonso) never to be afraid of the size of those who bullied me. My brothers convinced me that the bigger the foe, the harder they would fall. Surprisingly many years later, I discovered this was so true. Reading the saga of David and Goliath reminded me of what my dear brothers had instilled in me. Furthermore, I found that the battles of life, when handed over to The Lord, are conquerable through Christ, who gives us His strength.

Joshua and Caleb disagreed with the other spies. Instead, they spoke words of incredible faith:

NUMBERS 14:6-9: JOSHUA, SON OF NUN, AND CALEB, SON OF JEPHUNNEH, MEMBERS OF THE SCOUTING PARTY, RIPPED THEIR CLOTHES AND ADDRESSED THE ASSEMBLED PEOPLE OF ISRAEL: "THE LAND WE WALKED THROUGH AND SCOUTED OUT IS A PARTICULARLY GOOD LAND— PARTICULARLY GOOD INDEED. IF GOD IS PLEASED WITH US. HE WILL LEAD US INTO THAT LAND, A LAND THAT FLOWS, AS THEY SAY, WITH MILK AND HONEY. AND HE WILL GIVE IT TO US. SO, DO NOT REBEL AGAINST GOD! AND DO NOT BE AFRAID OF THOSE PEOPLE. WHY WILL WE HAVE THEM FOR LUNCH? THEY HAVE NO PROTECTION, AND GOD IS ON OUR SIDE. SO, DO NOT BE AFRAID OF THEM. GOD IS PLEASED WITH US. HE WILL LEAD US INTO THAT LAND, A LAND THAT FLOWS, AS THEY SAY, WITH MILK AND HONEY. AND HE WILL GIVE IT TO US. SO DO NOT REBEL AGAINST GOD! AND DO NOT BE AFRAID OF THOSE PEOPLE. WHY WILL WE HAVE THEM FOR LUNCH? THEY HAVE NO PROTECTION, AND GOD IS ON OUR SIDE. So DO NOT BE AFRAID OF THEM.

Joshua and Caleb reminded me of my two brothers, who were unafraid of giants. The bigger you are, the harder you fall, the bigger the foe, the bigger the target. David could not miss Goliath, for he was a large target. Joshua and Caleb encouraged the nation not to heed the negative words of the other spies; instead, they were to place their faith in The Lord who was with them. This whole saga shows forth the folly of negative influences. To this very day, we face the same problem. We allow the principle of democracy to rob us of our faith in God. The ten spies outvoted two faithful men. The nation heeded the report of the majority.

They succumbed to the evil report of the spies, and because of their lack of faith, they wandered forty years in the wilderness:

NUMBERS 14:34-35: ACCORDING TO THE NUMBER OF THE DAYS IN WHICH YOU SPIED OUT THE LAND, FORTY DAYS, A YEAR FOR EACH DAY, YOU SHALL BEAR YOUR INIQUITY FORTY YEARS, AND YOU SHALL KNOW MY DISPLEASURE.' ³⁵ I, THE LORD, HAVE SPOKEN. SURELY THIS WILL I DO TO ALL THIS WICKED CONGREGATION WHO ARE GATHERED TOGETHER AGAINST ME: IN THIS WILDERNESS, THEY SHALL COME TO A FULL END, AND THERE THEY SHALL DIE."

Our Spiritual Sons must come under the umbrella of our Spiritual Fatherhood. We must steer them clear of murmuring and complaining Christians. Not only will they be robbed of their newfound faith, but others will also suffer, just as the entire Jewish nation suffered because of the lack of faith of the ten men.

SPIRITUAL PROVISION

The role of the natural Father is to support his children. Through his intense labor, the Father must supply food for his children. He must clothe them. The Father must provide a safe abode. Other than all that, he must set forth a Godly lifestyle before his children so that they may emulate (imitate) him and thus serve The Lord. David, the prophetic psalmist, paints a vivid picture of the role of a Spiritual Father in Psalm 23:

"GOD, MY SHEPHERD! I DO NOT NEED A THING. YOU HAVE BEDDED ME DOWN IN LUSH MEADOWS; YOU FIND ME QUIET POOLS TO DRINK FROM"

The children lack nothing because of the hard work of the committed Father. The Spiritual Father also must support their Spiritual Sons. He must feed them The Bread of Life, clothe them with the Righteousness of God and place them in an Environment of Peace regardless of what is happening in an upside-down world. The Father must walk before his Spiritual Sons as a living epistle read and known by all men (see 2 Corinthians 3:2). He must live an exemplary life.

Often in our over-eagerness as Spiritual Fathers to hasten the spiritual growth of our Spiritual Sons, we feed them the wrong diet. For example, a newborn baby's diet compared to two-year-old shows a vast difference;

the baby has only breast milk, while the two-year-old has milk, vegetables, and meat. Reverse this diet; rest assured, there will be massive complications and even death. Similarly, the wise Spiritual Father prescribes a proper diet that suits the various stages of spiritual infancy to that spiritual maturity:

1 CORINTHIANS 3:2: I FED YOU WITH MILK, NOT SOLID FOOD, FOR YOU WERE NOT READY. AND EVEN NOW, YOU ARE NOT YET READY.

I am acutely aware of the Fathering mistakes I have made in the past. My nurturing of the early years of the Spiritual Sons was often way out. Instead of giving them the sincere milk of The Word in their early years, I was foolishly feeding them The Meat of the Word, and it was no wonder many of them suffered from spiritual constipation. Sadly, my first time with the Spiritual Sons centered on doctrinal issues, not discipleship.

I have since learned that discipleship always precedes doctrine. It is not always what you know that counts; instead, it is what you live. CHARACTER ALWAYS PRECEDES KNOWLEDGE.

The wise Spiritual Father knows the ultimate will of God for all God's Born-Again children are conformed to the image of His Son, Jesus Christ.

ROMANS 8:28-29: AND WE KNOW THAT FOR THOSE WHO LOVE GOD, ALL THINGS WORK TOGETHER FOR GOOD, FOR THOSE WHO ARE CALLED ACCORDING TO HIS PURPOSE. ²⁹ FOR THOSE WHOM HE FOREKNEW HE ALSO PREDESTINED TO BE CONFORMED TO THE IMAGE OF HIS SON, IN ORDER, HE MIGHT BE THE FIRSTBORN AMONG MANY BROTHERS.

Though our ministries are essential to God, our lifestyle is paramount. When the Spiritual Sons express the characteristics of a Godly lifestyle, we change their diet. It is of utmost importance that the diet follows the stipulated chronological sequence:

PRACTICAL CHRISTIAN LIVING

THE FUNDAMENTALS OF THE FAITH

ANTHROPOLOGY

HERMENEUTICS

CHRISTIAN PSYCHOLOGY AND COUNSELLING

HOMILETICS

The Word of God is faithful, dependable, and able to improve people's lives. A true soldier knows and can use his weapons of warfare effectively. In the Body of Christ, there is a diversity of beliefs. Often it is not easy to find what is authentic.

The Word of God warns us of the subtlety of Satan:

2 CORINTHIANS 11:14: "AND NO WONDER! FOR SATAN HIMSELF TRANSFORMS HIMSELF INTO AN ANGEL OF LIGHT."

The Word of God also warns that he is the expert in disguise:

MATHEW 7:15: "BEWARE OF FALSE PROPHETS, WHO COME TO YOU IN SHEEP'S CLOTHING BUT INWARDLY ARE RAVENOUS WOLVES."

No wonder the Spiritual Son must know The Fundamentals of the Faith. Being sound in doctrine gives him the ability to contend for the faith.

What does it take to be a successful minister of The Gospel? There are many good answers; however, over the years, through trial and error, I have discovered that knowing the anthropology (culture) of various ethnicities helps us understand people better. What works with one ethnicity does not work with another ethnicity. The English Dictionary gives a sound meaning of Ethnicity:

THE STUDY OF HUMAN SOCIETIES AND CULTURES AND THEIR DEVELOPMENT

Anthropology is the study of man. Therefore, this is a vital subject in developing the Spiritual Son, for it deals with the origin of man, the fall of man, and man's ultimate destiny. Ministry is with people; therefore, we must know all that is to know of people. Not every person has the same temperament. Not every person has the same environment. Not every person has the same education. Not every person has the same religion. There are four different temperaments, and these are:

SANGUINE

CHOLERIC
MELANCHOLIC
PHLEGMATIC

The Wikipedia Free Encyclopedia describes the four different temperaments as follows:

THE SANGUINE: They are fundamentally sociable and pleasure-seeking; sanguine people are impulsive and charismatic. They tend to enjoy social gatherings and making new friends and tend to be boisterous. They are usually quite creative and often daydream. Sanguine personalities struggle with following tasks all the way through, are chronically late and tend to be forgetful and sometimes sarcastic. When they pursue a new hobby, they lose interest as soon as it ceases to be engaging or fun. They are very much people persons. They are talkative and not shy and have a shameless nature. What they do is right. They have no lack of confidence. They are warm-hearted, pleasant, lively, and optimistic. They have been called "people-oriented extroverts."

THE CHOLERIC: The choleric temperament is fundamentally ambitious and leader-like. They have a lot of aggression, energy, and passion and try to instill that in others. They are task-oriented people and are focused on getting a job done efficiently; their motto is usually "do it now." They can dominate people of other temperaments with their strong wills, especially phlegmatic types, and can become authoritarian. Many great charismatic military and political figures were choleric. They like to oversee everything and are good at planning, as they can often immediately see a practical solution to a problem. However, they can quickly fall into deep depression or moodiness when failures or setbacks befall them. They have been called "task-oriented extroverts."

THE MELANCHOLIC: The melancholic temperament is introverted and given thought. Unhappy people are perceived as very (or overly) pondering, considerate, and excessively cautious. Melancholy can be highly creative in poetry, art, and invention and are sensitive to others. Because of this sensitivity and thoughtfulness, they can become preoccupied with the tragedy and cruelty of the world and are susceptible to depression and moodiness. Often, they are perfectionists. Their desire for perfection often results in a high degree of personal excellence. It causes them to be highly conscientious and difficult to relate to because others often cannot please them. They are self-reliant and independent, preferring to do things themselves to meet their standards. One negative part of being

melancholic is that they can get so involved in what they do that they forget to think of other issues. Their caution enables them to prevent problems that the more impulsive sanguine runs into and causes them to procrastinate and remain in the planning stage of a project for exceptionally long periods. Melancholy prefers to avoid much attention and stay in the background; however, they want recognition for their many creative works. They have been called "task-oriented introverts."

PHLEGMATIC: The phlegmatic temperament is fundamentally relaxed and quiet, ranging from warmly attentive to lazily sluggish. Phlegmatic tend to be content with themselves and are kind. Phlegmatics are consistent; they can be relied upon as steady and faithful friends. They are accepting and affectionate, making friends quickly. They tend to be good diplomats because their tendency not to judge and friendly nature makes reconciling differing groups easy. Phlegmatic prefer to see and think about the world around them while not getting involved. They may try to inspire others to do things they think about doing. They may be shy and often prefer stability to uncertainty and change. Their fear of change (and work) can make them susceptible to stagnation, laziness, or even stubbornness. They are consistent, relaxed, calm, rational, curious, and observant, qualities that make them good administrators. On the other hand, they can also be passive-aggressive. They have been called "people-oriented introverts."

With the above explanations of the four diverse temperaments, the wise Father cannot mold and shape each of them with the same approach and method. They are so different from each other, demanding various methods, incentives, motivation, stimuli, and encouragement. Though the techniques may be vastly different, the curriculum remains the same. The wise Father uses Bible passages and Bible Characters to help mold and shape each temperament though his approaches are distinct.

The mere fact that four temperaments create a significant problem in training the Spiritual Son. Some Ascended Gifted Ministers (Spiritual Fathers, leaders) prefer coaching several Spiritual Sons simultaneously, while others prefer training one at a time. I have always liked to train one son at a time. My reasoning is simple: I can give the Spiritual Son my full attention. I concentrate on one son so that I can give him my best. Spiritual Fathers aim not at quantity but quality.

HERMENEUTICS

I was encouraged to attend Bible College early in my salvation. If my memory serves me correctly, I served The Lord for about two months when I started my Bible College education. It was a three-year program; unfortunately, I had to attend the second-year class when I enrolled. I applied myself diligently, and almost immediately, I began preaching. I did not understand that I missed the primary subjects of the first-year program. I attended the second-year class, which was way beyond my spiritual experience. If ever there was a confused preacher, it was I. In the first year of my salvation experience, I was preaching on The Book of Revelation and, may I add, once again, way beyond my level of spiritual maturity. I vividly remember preaching once on Samson and the Nazarite vow. Samson, as a Nazarite, was not to drink alcohol in any form to the extent that he could not even eat a grape or a raisin. He was not allowed to touch the dead. Samson was not allowed to cut his hair. In my preaching on Samson's vow of not having his haircut, I preached that his long hair represented his long hours of prayer. Rest assured, for some time. The Leadership removed me from the preaching roster.

In my first year at Bible College, I was fascinated with Typology, and all my preaching was typology. I was misrepresenting The Word of God. However, in the second year, I studied Hermeneutics (the science of interpretation), and I developed a well-rounded biblical expression of preaching.

PSYCHOLOGY AND CHRISTIAN COUNSELLING

The Spiritual Son must study human behavior, mind, and mental states. To steer people on the right road, we must know how they think, act, and behave in various life circumstances. One of the first truths of counseling that must be embedded in the Spiritual Son is the importance of listening to people. A wise counselor is a perceptive (discerning) listener. Too often, we interject and thus miss all the person wants to divulge. The Spiritual Son must learn the art of listening and summarizing all that has been shown and then share the proper Scriptures to help offset the problem. One more important fact that must be adhered to; is never to be a SEER. The New Testament does not endorse this practice for The Church. Our Counselling is from The Word of God. This is certain when we consider HEBREWS 1:1-2:

LONG AGO, AT MANY TIMES AND IN MANY WAYS, GOD SPOKE TO OUR SPIRITUAL FATHERS BY THE PROPHETS, BUT IN THESE LAST DAYS, HE HAS SPOKEN TO US BY HIS SON, WHOM HE APPOINTED THE HEIR OF ALL THINGS, THROUGH WHOM ALSO HE CREATED THE WORLD.

Though we fervently believe in New Testament Ascended Gifted Prophets, we do not accept them as SEERS. All counseling comes via The Word of God, for Jesus is The Word of God. However, this does not mean that The Prophet does not speak A Word of Knowledge, which means he may reveal the innermost secrets of our inner man. Like the other four Ascended Gifts, Prophets must counsel from The Word of God when people share their problems. This safeguards the Prophet against seeking a following and doing business out of his gift. In simple words, the Prophet is not a fortune teller.

Keeping the confidence of the counselee is paramount in Christian Counselling. What is shared with the counselor is often the innermost secret of the counselee. One of the major pitfalls of many men of God is using the disclosures in counseling sessions as preaching material. The Christian Counsellor must always keep the confidence of those whom he counsels. He must be their confidant.

I had an experience that jolted my respect for Ministers early in my salvation. Struggling with sinful habits and wanting freedom, I went to a minister for counseling. I shared my heart with him. I held absolutely nothing back, and to my horror, a few weeks later, the Minister, in his sermon, revealed all I shared with him in the counseling session. Thank God my name was not mentioned. My confidence in ministers of The Gospel was devastated. The Spiritual Son must know that such practices are unethical, bringing a smear to Christian ministry. He must be taught vehemently that there are enough examples of people's pitfalls in The Word of God. Breaking people's confidence and sharing their innermost secrets in no way builds up the faith of others; it just causes them to wonder who is spoken of. God deals with all humankind's pitfalls and habitual sins in His Word. Moreover, when we preach and teach about sin and its horrible consequences, God has placed more than enough examples in His Word that we may use in our preaching and teaching. David was the king of Israel, but he committed murder and adultery. Samson was a Judge of Israel who sought a wife outside of

Judaism. Achan ignored the instruction of Joshua and hid what he had stolen. Moses, instead of speaking to the rock, struck it in anger. The Bible deals with every facet of life, and if we are to build up the faith of those we counsel and preach unto, our source of reference for our preaching and teaching is none other than The Word of God. The Word of God builds up the faith of God's people:

ROMANS 10:17: FAITH COMES FROM HEARING, AND HEARING THROUGH THE WORD OF CHRIST.

One more final thought on keeping confidence; in our counseling sessions, we are never to use other people's experiences to help solve the problems of whom we are counseling. The Spiritual Son must know that although the issues are similar and even the same sin habits are prevalent, each counseling case is quite different. One counseling session cannot be used to rectify another counseling session. Once again, we must resort to the infallible Word of God:

2 TIMOTHY 3:16: ALL SCRIPTURE IS BREATHED OUT BY GOD AND PROFITABLE FOR TEACHING, FOR REPROOF, FOR CORRECTION, AND TRAINING IN RIGHTEOUSNESS,

In closing, let me reiterate the golden rules of sound counseling:

- BE ATTENTIVE AND LISTEN INTENTLY.
- ALWAYS KEEP THE CONFIDENCE OF THOSE YOU COUNSEL.
- WHEN ENDEAVOURING TO REPROOF, CORRECT, AND INSTRUCT, ALWAYS USE THE UNADULTERATED WORD OF GOD AS YOUR SOURCE OF REFERENCE. NEVER USE THE PROBLEMS OF CONGREGANTS AS EXAMPLES IN COUNSELLING.

HOMILETICS

When I reflect on my early years of ministry, I have a good laugh, and there are those specific memories of certain sermons I wish I had not preached. However, I have always maintained that people can learn from the mistakes of others and, more so, from my mistakes. In training Spiritual Sons for the ministry, we must enlighten them of the many pitfalls of the ministry, and who knows better of these pitfalls but the Father himself? I have made some stupid and regrettable mistakes over

the years, and it is my duty as a Father to ensure that my Spiritual Sons do not make the same mistakes. As Spiritual Fathers, our ethical duty is to steer our Spiritual Sons clear of the pitfalls and errors clouded by our respective ministries.

To my mind, and I am sincere, I began my preaching ministry too soon in my salvation experience. I believe that preaching is a grave responsibility and not meant for novices. Too often, Spiritual Fathers allow their Spiritual Sons to preach when they are yet novices of the Faith. Instead, spiritual Fathers should encourage their Spiritual Sons to witness Jesus to the unsaved in the early years of their salvation. They are encouraged to share their testimonies of how God saved them and delivered them from their habitual sins. Then, as they show faithfulness and consistency in this regard and serve their fellow Christians and friends with honor and respect, they should begin to preach after at least one year.

I have always been persuaded that the best place to begin preaching, teaching, and pastoral ministry is with The Sunday School. I base this on Scripture. First, the Lord asked Peter, the Apostle who had denied The Lord thrice three times, whether he loved The Lord. His reply was a definite yes. Moreover, it is exciting how Jesus responds to Peter's confession of his love for The Lord. In His response to Peter's confession, Jesus conveys three explicit commands to Peter, and these are:

FEED MY LAMBS

TEND MY SHEEP

FEED MY SHEEP.

JOHN 21:15-19: AFTER BREAKFAST, JESUS SAID TO SIMON PETER, "SIMON, SON OF JOHN, DO YOU LOVE ME MORE THAN THESE?" "YES, MASTER, YOU KNOW I LOVE YOU." JESUS SAID, "**FEED MY LAMBS.**" HE THEN ASKED A SECOND TIME, "SIMON, SON OF JOHN, DO YOU LOVE ME?" YES, MASTER, YOU KNOW I LOVE YOU. "JESUS SAID, "**TEND MY SHEEP.**" THEN HE SAID IT A THIRD TIME: "SIMON, SON OF JOHN, DO YOU LOVE ME?" "PETER WAS UPSET THAT HE ASKED FOR THE THIRD TIME, "DO YOU LOVE ME?" SO, HE ANSWERED, "MASTER, YOU KNOW EVERYTHING THERE IS TO KNOW. YOU

HAVE GOT TO KNOW THAT I LOVE YOU. JESUS SAID, **FEED MY SHEEP**. I'M TELLING YOU THE VERY TRUTH NOW: WHEN YOU WERE YOUNG, YOU DRESSED AND WENT WHEREVER YOU WISHED, BUT WHEN YOU GET OLD, YOU'LL HAVE TO STRETCH OUT YOUR HANDS WHILE SOMEONE ELSE DRESSES YOU AND TAKES YOU WHERE YOU DON'T WANT TO GO." HE SAID THIS TO HINT AT THE KIND OF DEATH BY WHICH PETER WOULD GLORIFY GOD. AND THEN HE COMMANDED, "FOLLOW ME."

The first task given to Peter is feeding the lambs, and in my mind, this speaks of new converts and children. It is in the Sunday School that I believe that all modern ministries should begin (THE READER NEED NOT AGREE). As Spiritual Sons prove themselves faithful in The Sunday School after one year, the Father should start the next phase of their training program, preaching and teaching. Many teach that preaching is an art. I believe preaching can paint vivid pictures in the congregation's minds. However, I am more of the persuasion that preaching is a call from God; therefore, all preaching and teachings must be Word-based.

In the early months of my conversion, I will never forget that I was frustrated and disappointed with a specific Bible Teacher when attending the weekly Bible Study at Church. He constantly said that this author and that author said this and that. Still being an incredibly young convert, I wanted to scream, "When are you going to say something, and when is God going to say something through you? Praise God I had the presence of mind to zip my lip. I was taught a great lesson through this. I realized that research was essential, but I also realized that we are not just meant to be echoes of what God had said through other servants of God, and by this, I am not alluding to not reiterating what the authors of the various books of the Bible had written. We are to quote what the original authors have penned in The Word of God. However, not always called to reiterate the interpretations of the various scholars on what was written by The Holy Spirit, the author of the Bible.

After several years in the teaching ministry, I had the usual tea break between classes at Covenant Bible College when The Lord spoke to my spirit. I will always hold that moment dear to my heart and ministry. It was not a loud voice; it was the still quiet-peaceful voice of The Most-

High God: I HAVE NOT CALLED YOU TO ECHO THE VOICE OF MY SERVANTS. I HAVE CALLED YOU TO ECHO MY VOICE.” Brief and straight to the point was how God spoke to me. Thank God, I was all alone in the foyer, for I began to weep profusely, raising my hands and worshipping The Lord. Being a Bible college Lecturer for more than twenty years at that time (I realized that most of my teachings came from manuals and textbooks. I was most definitely echoing the voices of other mighty men of God. No doubt, what they had written was profound and informative, but now God wanted me to have my say. I knew only one way I could have my say: to wait upon The Lord. I had to wait on The Lord to hear what The Holy Spirit wanted me to hear from the throne room of God. My whole preparation for my preaching and teaching ministry began anew, for what I was doing for my preaching at that time was using my teaching material from the manuals and textbooks.

Spiritual Sons must know the distinction between Preaching and Teaching. Preaching, in most cases, should be directed toward the unsaved, the unenlightened. At the same time, Teaching is toward The Born-Again, the enlightened. This is clear when we consider the ministry of Jesus to the Jews. They had The Old Testament. It was their reference point. No wonder Jesus was called Rabbi (Teacher) by the Jews. As a Teacher to the Jews, Jesus explained The Old Testament. However, Jesus preached to the Samaritan woman and The Samaritans for they contorted The Old Testament, for they only believed in The Five Books of Moses. They were unenlightened, and teaching them would have been beyond their understanding. The Spiritual Son must understand this hermeneutical truth.

Preaching is for the unenlightened (the unsaved), and Teaching is for the enlightened (the Born-Again). No wonder The Word of God teaches the vital truth of God's Word being spiritually discerned and not naturally discerned. The Lord now led my whole approach. I would read the Chapter that I was to preach from over and over, sometimes as much as fifty times, and then wait upon The Lord in prayer, speaking in tongues and expecting The Holy Spirit to unveil the wonders of God's Word. Spiritual Fathers must convey to Spiritual Sons the importance of the study:

2 TIMOTHY 2:15: ALL SCRIPTURE IS BREATHED OUT BY GOD AND PROFITABLE FOR TEACHING, FOR REPROOF, FOR CORRECTION, AND TRAINING IN RIGHTEOUSNESS,

Wise Spiritual Fathers also help select books and articles for the library of the Spiritual Son, thus, ensuring that the doctrines and Scriptural persuasions be sound. But though the Spiritual Son must be encouraged to do research, the Father must first embed in the Spiritual Son he has to prepare sermons.

To develop their peculiar preaching and teaching ministries, or whatever ministry God has called them into, they must learn to hear from God for their preaching material. Teach them the importance of reading The Scriptures repeatedly, teach them how to memorize the Scripture, and teach them how to meditate on the Scripture. Impart the truth of first making their effort in preparation and then researching.

A Father that wants to see his son excel always steers the Spiritual Son clear of the pitfalls of the ministry. I have always shared my failures with my Spiritual Sons and convinced them that when they drive themselves away from the mistakes I have made in my preaching ministry, they will outgrow my ministry, and it would not take them as long as I did to develop the preaching ministry that God had intended for me.

It must be the intention of the Ascended Gifted Father that his Spiritual Sons outgrow him in all facets of the ministry. Therefore, he must withhold absolutely nothing back from those whom he trains. Over the years of my ministry, God taught me how to read and study The Holy Scriptures through some mightily anointed men of God. It has helped me tremendously, and one of the significant advantages of knowing how to read and review The Scriptures has saved me needless hours of research.

One of the first truths concerning The Holy Scriptures that our Spiritual Sons must discover is that The Word of God speaks for itself. The Word of God interprets The Word of God. Scripture always must be compared with Scripture; therefore, our Spiritual Sons and protégées must be taught how to read and study The Word of God so that The Word of God speaks clearly.

The more senses we involve when reading the Word of God, the better our retention. We usually use two senses when reading: sight and touch. For more retention, reading aloud is far more beneficial.

I randomly read The Word of God in the early years of my salvation and ministry. I was consistently reading; however, I was reading all over the Bible. One day, in Genesis, the next day, in Revelation. This no doubt stunted my growth in the knowledge of The Word. Finally, anointed men spoke to me and taught me how to read and study The Bible. I began reading and studying systematically. I read according to the subject matter.

After their wise counsel, I also began reading book by book. First, I made sure I completed reading one book of the Bible at a time before I continued reading. Secondly, I began reading systematically. I started reading topically. I would take a topic like faith, use the Strong's Concordance, and find all the relevant faith scriptures. I then began to do the biographical reading. I read and studied the life and ministries of all God's Bible characters. I gleaned so much from that that it molded my spiritual life and ministry. I read of the greatness and pitfalls of these mighty men, embracing their good but trying by God's Grace to avoid their pitfalls. I remember vividly reading of King David, what a mighty warrior he was, a great worshipper, and more than being a king, I discovered he was a Prophet of God. A shepherd youth who cared for his Father's sheep and became king of Israel years later cared for God's people. I discovered why he fell into sin and how he tried to cover up his sin; the devil will always find work for idle hands.

2 SAMUEL 11:1-5: WHEN THAT TIME OF YEAR CAME AROUND AGAIN, THE ANNIVERSARY OF THE AMMONITE AGGRESSION, DAVID DISPATCHED JOAB AND HIS FIGHTING MEN OF ISRAEL IN FULL FORCE TO DESTROY THE AMMONITES FOR GOOD. THEY LAID SIEGE TO RABBAH, BUT DAVID STAYED IN JERUSALEM. ONE LATE AFTERNOON, DAVID GOT UP FROM TAKING HIS NAP AND WAS STROLLING ON THE ROOF OF THE PALACE. FROM HIS VANTAGE POINT ON THE ROOF, HE SAW A WOMAN BATHING. THE WOMAN WAS STUNNINGLY BEAUTIFUL. DAVID SENT TO ASK ABOUT HER AND TOLD, "ISN'T THIS BATHSHEBA, DAUGHTER OF ELIAM AND WIFE OF URIAH THE HITTITE?" DAVID SENT HIS AGENTS TO GET HER. AFTER SHE ARRIVED, HE

WENT TO BED WITH HER. (THIS OCCURRED DURING THE TIME OF "PURIFICATION" FOLLOWING HER PERIOD.) THEN SHE RETURNED HOME. BEFORE LONG, SHE REALIZED SHE WAS PREGNANT. LATER SHE SENT WORD TO DAVID: "I'm PREGNANT." (2 SA 11:1-5)

No matter who we are, our idleness will, in most cases, lead to sin and failure. Instead of David going to war, he relaxed at home (note the underlining of the above Scripture). Our Spiritual Sons must know this. So be it that they are not busy in the work of The Lord. They are to find something constructive to do. Our minds and hands must be productive and constructive when not engaged in ministry.

The other lesson I learned from King David is never to allow one sin to lead to another. When he discovered Bathsheba was pregnant with his child, David made every concerted effort to get Uriah back home to sleep with Bathsheba and give the illusion that the child was Uriah's. This failed, and King David had Joab send Uriah to the front line of the battle to be killed.

Thank God King David repented, and God uniquely honored him because of his heart of repentance. This speaks volumes about the Grace and mercy of God. We do not deserve God's favor, and we often think it is all over when we mess up seriously. We feel God has given up on us, and we want to walk away from the call of God on our life. No doubt, there were significant repercussions to David's sins.

2 SAMUEL 12:9-12: WHY HAVE YOU DESPISED THE WORD OF THE LORD, TO DO WHAT IS EVIL IN HIS SIGHT? YOU HAVE STRUCK DOWN URIAH THE HITTITE WITH THE SWORD AND HAVE TAKEN HIS WIFE TO BE YOUR WIFE AND HAVE KILLED HIM WITH THE SWORD OF THE AMMONITES. ¹⁰ NOW. THEREFORE, THE SWORD SHALL NEVER DEPART FROM YOUR HOUSE BECAUSE YOU HAVE DESPISED ME AND HAVE TAKEN THE WIFE OF URIAH THE HITTITE TO BE YOUR WIFE.' ¹¹ THUS SAYS THE LORD, 'BEHOLD, I WILL RAISE EVIL AGAINST YOU OUT OF YOUR OWN HOUSE. AND I WILL TAKE YOUR WIVES BEFORE YOUR EYES AND GIVE THEM TO YOUR NEIGHBOR, AND HE SHALL LIE WITH YOUR WIVES IN THE SIGHT OF THIS SUN. ¹² FOR YOU DID IT

SECRETLY, BUT I WILL DO THIS THING BEFORE ALL ISRAEL AND BEFORE THE SUN.”

Although God punished David severely, God honored King David for his heart of repentance. How did God honor King David? Primarily God did not remove King David from the throne of Israel. However, there was much pain and suffering because of David’s sins. Furthermore, God did not remove the mantle of his Prophetic ministry from King David. David wrote over half of the one hundred and fifty Psalms, and it is accepted among most scholars and theologians that he wrote Psalms 32, 52, 86, and 122 after his sins of adultery and murder.

Humankind never fathom the depth of God’s love and forgiveness. Sadly, the Church does not understand this great truth; therefore, many mighty men of God are ostracized from the ministry. God honors a heart of repentance. It is for this reason that King Jesus came into the world. Our Lord and Savior, King Jesus, came not for the righteous but for the unrighteous:

As we encourage our Spiritual Sons to do biographical studies, they will note the strengths and weaknesses of all God’s Bible servants. As their Spiritual Fathers, we must teach them how to chew the meat and throw away the bones. With God’s Grace and the Holy Spirit’s help, we must teach them how to incorporate all the good of God’s servants and discard all the bad. The Father instructs them on how to overcome temptation. He teaches them to pray and to run away from temptation. Too often, Spiritual Fathers emphasize the power of prayer. Though prayer is powerful, we must learn from Joseph. He overcame temptation by praying inwardly and running away from the temptation. I will never forget the proverb I heard while incredibly young: HE WHO RUNS AWAY LIVES TO FIGHT ANOTHER DAY.

Our merciful and gracious God bestowed two more outstanding honors upon King David. He is the very first servant of God who calls The Executor of The Eternal Godhead (The Spirit of God) THE HOLY SPIRIT:

PSALM 51:11: DO NOT CAST ME AWAY FROM YOUR PRESENCE, AND DO NOT TAKE YOUR HOLY SPIRIT FROM ME.

The last honor is mind-blowing. Let me assure you that if I were God, then we would not have given King David this tremendous honor. We would have most definitely retracted our prophetic promise.

God chose King David from out of among the sheepfolds. King David lived among and kept the sheep. David smelt like a sheep. God always chooses the foolish to confound the wise (see 1Co 1:27). David, who had such humble beginnings, entered a covenant with God. This covenant in no way hinged on David meeting specific criteria.

1 CHRONICLES 17:7-14 AMP: NOW, THEREFORE, THIS IS WHAT YOU SHALL SAY TO MY SERVANT DAVID: ‘THUS SAYS THE LORD OF HOSTS, “I TOOK YOU FROM THE PASTURE, FROM FOLLOWING THE SHEEP, TO BE LEADER OVER MY PEOPLE ISRAEL. ⁸ I HAVE BEEN WITH YOU WHEREVER YOU HAVE GONE, AND I HAVE CUT OFF ALL YOUR ENEMIES FROM BEFORE YOU, AND I WILL MAKE YOUR NAME LIKE THE NAME OF THE GREAT ONES OF THE EARTH. ⁹ I WILL APPOINT A PLACE FOR MY PEOPLE ISRAEL AND WILL PLANT THEM, SO THAT THEY MAY LIVE IN THEIR PLACE AND NOT BE MOVED AGAIN [NOR TREMBLE WITH FEAR], AND THE WICKED WILL NOT WASTE (PERSECUTE) THEM ANYMORE, AS FORMERLY, ¹⁰ SINCE THE TIME THAT I COMMANDED JUDGES TO BE OVER MY PEOPLE ISRAEL. AND I WILL HUMBLE AND SUBDUE ALL YOUR ENEMIES. FURTHERMORE, I TELL YOU THAT THE LORD WILL BUILD YOU A HOUSE (A BLESSED POSTERITY). ¹¹ IT SHALL COME TO PASS THAT WHEN YOUR DAYS ARE COMPLETED, AND YOU MUST GO TO BE WITH YOUR SPIRITUAL FATHERS [IN DEATH], I WILL RAISE *ONE OF YOUR* DESCENDANTS AFTER YOU, ONE OF YOUR SPIRITUAL SONS, AND I WILL ESTABLISH HIS KINGDOM. ¹² HE SHALL BUILD ME A HOUSE, AND I WILL ESTABLISH HIS THRONE FOREVER. ¹³ I WILL BE HIS FATHER, AND HE SHALL BE MY SON. I WILL NOT TAKE MY STEADFAST LOVE AND MERCY AWAY FROM HIM, AS I TOOK IT FROM HIM (KING SAUL) WHO WAS BEFORE YOU. ¹⁴ BUT I WILL SETTLE HIM IN MY HOUSE AND MY KINGDOM FOREVER, AND HIS THRONE SHALL BE ESTABLISHED FOREVERMORE”

I have purposely underlined the last verse of the covenant. This verse speaks of Jesus, whose kingdom will be without end and whose throne is forever. Jesus was to be in the genealogy of David. THIS IS THE MOST SPECTACULAR HONOR THAT GOD GAVE DAVID:

MATHEW 1:1: THE FAMILY TREE OF JESUS CHRIST, DAVID'S SON, ABRAHAM'S SON."

The Gospel of Mathew records the phrase "Son of David" ten times. The Gospel of Mark records the term "Son of David" twice. Luke's Gospel records the term "Son of David" thrice. God honored David, who fell into terrible sin, and because of a heart of sincere repentance, God honored David. There is so much that our Spiritual Sons can glean from the good part of David's life, and when applied, they will have an excellent relationship with God and a powerful God-anointed ministry:

SPIRITUAL APPLICATION

GOD CALLS THOSE WHOM OTHERS CONSIDER INSIGNIFICANT.

IDLENESS BREEDS SIN.

ENDEAVOURING TO COVER UP SIN ONLY LEADS TO MORE SIN.

GOD CHASTISES HIS SERVANTS.

GOD FORGIVES HIS SERVANTS WHEN THEY REPENT.

TRUE REPENTANCE ENSURES FORGIVENESS AND HONOR FROM GOD

The pitfalls of The Bible characters are God's stepping-stones for successful ministry when we, as Ascended Gifted SPIRITUAL FATHERS encourage our Spiritual Sons to glean from these mighty men of God. None are perfect. David is a classic example of the Grace of God. God hates sin but loves the sinner. David, an adulterer, and a murderer, cried to God for forgiveness, and a loving God forgave him.

David's throne was not taken away from him. What a merciful God. Indeed, what astounds us, EVEN MORE, IS THE POWER OF GOD'S LOVE, FOR LOVE, COVERS A MULTITUDE OF SINS.

So much may be gleaned from Moses. However, time and space do not allow us to write everything we can profit from him. However, we must

impart one crucial flaw and one outstanding attribute in his dynamic ministry to our Spiritual Sons and protégées.

At times, the ministry can become very frustrating. As Ministers, we go out of our way to bless God's people and are often blamed for their problems. Satan and his cohorts have earmarked God's servants for failure. Every conceivable attack is launched against us because we are opening the prison doors of all those Satan holds captive because of their sins. One of Satan's most successful strategies against Ministers of The Gospel is attacks from within The Church itself. The Word of God teaches us that we can resist the enemy (see James 4:7). However, we cannot fight (oppose) our fellow brethren of the Faith,

Moses gives us a classic example of how our people can frustrate us to the extent that we lose our composure and find our temper. An angry man becomes an unwise man. No more is the man in control of his emotions. Instead, his feelings are in control of him. When emotions control men of God, they do not act according to the specific commands of God. They act impulsively. They do things according to earlier experiences. Sadly, the consequences thereof are devastating.

The book of Numbers 20: 1-13 paints a memorable picture of how a man of God can be frustrated by murmuring and complaining about people of God:

IN THE FIRST MONTH, THE ENTIRE COMPANY OF THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL ARRIVED IN THE WILDERNESS OF ZIN. THE PEOPLE STAYED IN KADESH. MIRIAM DIED THERE, AND SHE WAS BURIED. THERE WAS NO WATER FOR THE COMMUNITY, SO THEY GANGED UP ON MOSES AND AARON. THEY ATTACKED MOSES: "WE WISH WE'D DIED WHEN THE REST OF OUR BROTHERS DIED BEFORE GOD. WHY DID YOU HAUL THIS CONGREGATION OF GOD OUT HERE IN THIS WILDERNESS TO DIE, PEOPLE AND CATTLE ALIKE? AND WHY DID YOU TAKE US OUT OF EGYPT IN THE FIRST PLACE, DRAGGING US INTO THIS MISERABLE COUNTRY? NO GRAIN, NO FIGS, NO GRAPEVINES, NO POMEGRANATES—AND NOW NOT EVEN ANY WATER! "MOSES AND AARON WALKED FROM THE ASSEMBLED CONGREGATION TO THE TENT OF MEETING AND THREW THEMSELVES FACE DOWN ON THE GROUND. AND THEY SAW THE GLORY OF GOD. GOD SPOKE TO MOSES: "TAKE THE STAFF.

ASSEMBLE THE COMMUNITY, YOU, AND YOUR BROTHER AARON. SPEAK TO THAT ROCK THAT IS RIGHT IN FRONT OF THEM, AND IT WILL GIVE WATER. YOU WILL BRING WATER OUT OF THE ROCK FOR THEM; THE CONGREGATION AND CATTLE WILL BOTH DRINK. “MOSES TOOK THE STAFF AWAY FROM GOD’S PRESENCE, AS COMMANDED. HE AND AARON ROUNDED UP THE WHOLE CONGREGATION IN FRONT OF THE ROCK. MOSES SPOKE: “LISTEN, REBELS! DO WE HAVE TO BRING WATER OUT OF THIS ROCK FOR YOU? “WITH THAT, MOSES RAISED HIS ARM AND SLAMMED HIS STAFF AGAINST THE ROCK—ONCE, TWICE. WATER Poured OUT. CONGREGATION AND CATTLE DRANK. GOD SAID TO MOSES AND AARON, “BECAUSE YOU DIDN’T TRUST ME, DIDN’T TREAT ME WITH HOLY REVERENCE IN FRONT OF THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL, YOU TWO AREN’T GOING TO LEAD THIS COMPANY INTO THE LAND THAT I AM GIVING THEM.” THESE WERE THE WATERS OF MERIBAH (BICKERING), WHERE THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL BICKERED WITH GOD, AND HE REVEALED HIMSELF AS HOLY.

It is interesting to note the instruction God gave Moses the first time the congregation complained about the lack of drinking water. He was to strike the rock AND ONCE ONLY.

The second time the congregation cried out for water, God specifically told Moses to speak to the rock (Numbers 20:1-13). Our Spiritual Sons must learn a powerful lesson from Moses’ experience. As servants of God, we must not allow our frustration to manifest itself in anger. It will rob us of God’s intended blessings. The irritation causes us to act according to yesterday’s instructions. Every day with God is a different day, and though we might deal with similar problems, the solution given by God is not always the same. Moses lost out; his punishment for striking the rock was grave. God did not allow Moses to take the people into the promised land.

The New Testament encourages the people of God to bless those who curse and spitefully use us (see Luke 6:28). The command is complicated to heed. Moses sets forth beautiful examples in his relationship with those he brought out of the land of Egypt. The Pentateuch has four occasions when God decided to annihilate His

people (Ex 32:7-14; Numbers 14:11-18; 16:20-35; 16:44-50). Moses intercedes on their behalf, and God repents his intended judgment.

The core of ministry is people. People are strange; they are forever changing their attitudes from one to the other. They love you today, and tomorrow they hate you. They bless you today, and tomorrow they curse you. This attitude was never in Moses's relationship with the people as their leader. Like Jesus, he loved the unlovable.

Many a mighty man of God has turned his back on the ministry because of people's disrespect. Servants of God are taken for granted unless men of God realize that the only hope for those coming up against them is the very ones they are cursing. From the onset of training, The Ascended Gifted Fathers must instill in his Spiritual Sons that no matter what people do and say against them, they are the only hope for the people they minister unto. Left to themselves, the people will destroy themselves. Just before the second time Moses interceded for the people, they wanted to stone him. Moses disregarded their evil intent and prayed for them.

God was determined to destroy them, but what Moses fervently says to The Lord to invoke the mercy and Grace of God is outstanding:

It is of the utmost importance to the well-being of the Spiritual Son's future ministry that he considers what God offered Moses. God promised to make Moses a great nation, the very promise that God had made to Abram (see Genesis 12:2). God was more than willing to revoke the covenant that he had made to Abram (who later was renamed, Abraham). This was a great honor for Moses if accepted. He was to be greater than Abraham was. Moses, in his heart, knew where his greatness lay. It was not in being more significant than the patriarch Abraham. Moses understood his greatness lay in his love for God and the people of God, his very persecutors.

Moses wrestled with the Lord in earnest intercession. How he did it was more than impressive; it was phenomenal. Moses appealed to the testimony of God among the Egyptians. he cried to the Lord to protect his perfect name. The Egyptians had heard how God led his people, by

day in a pillar of cloud, by night in a pillar of fire. Moses wisely reasoned with the lord. What is the use of all these great signs after the people's destruction? Moses understood that the EGYPTIANS AND THE OTHER NATIONS would dishonor God because he did not keep his promise of taking the people to the promised land (see Exodus 32:7-14).

Let us consider what can be gleaned from the ministry of the great Prophet Moses:

FRUSTRATION IN THE MINISTRY LEADS TO ANGER.

ANGER CAUSES GOD'S SERVANTS TO ACT IMPULSIVELY

WE HAVE THE POWER TO CHANGE GOD'S INTENTIONS

MOSES REFUSING THE OFFER THAT GOD BEGIN A NEW NATION WITH HIM SHOWS MOSES HONOURED HIS FOREFATHERS, NAMELY ABRAHAM, ISAAC, AND JACOB. FURTHERMORE, MOSES REMINDED GOD OF HIS PROMISE THAT HE WOULD MAKE OF ABRAHAM, ISAAC, AND JACOB A GREAT NATION, AND THEY WOULD INHERIT THE PROMISED LAND.

MOSES CAUSED GOD TO REPENT OF HIS FIERCE JUDGEMENT.

There are so many more of God's anointed servants of The Old and New Testaments that we can mold our ministries on. However, time and space do not allow us to go that far, and therefore we strongly suggest that Ascended Gifted Spiritual Fathers do biographical studies with the Spiritual Sons.

HOMILETICS

Many scholars define Homiletics as the art and craft of preaching. Over the many years of ministry, I have concluded that preaching is far more than an art and craft. It is even far more than imparting knowledge of God. Several years ago, in the early years of my preaching and teaching ministry, God spoke to me, and as usual, it was short and sweet, straight to the point: "Preachers are not just called TO PREACH GOD'S WORD BUT ALSO TO PRESENT THE GOD OF THE WORD." I did not understand what God meant. "Any Dick, Tom, and Harry can preach, but it takes the likes of a Peter, a James, and a John to make the presence of God real. "I meditated on this weird thought for some time and realized what it meant. Too many

preachers historically preach God's Word. Our preaching is always WHAT GOD HAD DONE. We are not just called to preach what God had done. We are also called to preach what God is doing now. How authentic is God's Word?

HEBREWS 13:8 NKJV: JESUS CHRIST IS THE SAME YESTERDAY, TODAY, AND FOREVER.

Let me assure The Church that God's power never fluctuates. It is forever constant. Holy Spirit preaching and teaching confirms the written Word of God:

Mark 16:17-18: AND THESE SIGNS WILL ACCOMPANY THOSE WHO BELIEVE: IN MY NAME, THEY WILL CAST OUT DEMONS; THEY WILL SPEAK IN NEW TONGUES; ¹⁸THEY WILL PICK UP SERPENTS WITH THEIR HANDS; AND IF THEY DRINK ANY DEADLY POISON, IT WILL NOT HURT THEM; THEY WILL LAY THEIR HANDS ON THE SICK, AND THEY WILL RECOVER."

There is no Amen in the book of The Acts of The Apostle. As Ascended Gifted Spiritual Fathers training men and women of God, we must convince our Spiritual Sons and daughters to expect the supernatural in their ministries through the Grace and leading of The Holy Spirit.

Many modern-day theologians inevitably dispute the supernatural in our day and age. The Apostolic Age is over; therefore, the supernatural manifestations of God's power are no more. If ever there is a book of the Bible having the wrong title, it is most definitely The Acts of The Apostles. The title should be The Acts of The Holy Spirit. I must concur (agree) with these theologians that the days of The Foundational Apostles are long gone. However, The Holy Spirit, who empowered them to perform the supernatural acts of The Holy Spirit, is still here in The Church and the world. The supernatural is not dependent upon man but on the Holy Spirit. This period in God's history is the time of The Holy Spirit. In the Old Testament, the emphasis was on the revelation of God, our Heavenly Father. The four Gospels of The New Testament and The Book of Revelation reveal Jesus Christ, our Saviour. The Holy Spirit is shown in the Apostles' Acts to The Book of Jude.

The Ascended Gifted Father must bring his Spiritual Sons to understand that no ministry is effective without The Holy Spirit. So, Jesus, our precious Lord, and Saviour, began His public ministry after He was baptized into the water by John the Baptist, and The Holy Spirit came upon Him as a dove, and God the Father bore witness of His Son. (See Mathew 3:11-17).

Jesus instructed His Foundational Apostles (see Ephesians 2:20) to wait for the Baptism into The Holy Spirit (see Acts 1:4-5). As their master, their public ministry only began after their unique experience with The Holy Spirit. Is the experience of our Spiritual Sons to be any different? Training men and women is a grave responsibility. It is also very demanding, and sometimes many wonders why their Spiritual Sons are not grasping their instruction. Though Ascended Gifted Spiritual Fathers are anointed of The Holy Spirit, they wonder why their teaching and ministerial instruction is not taking root in their Spiritual Sons. The answer is straightforward. Not only are the Spiritual Fathers to be filled with the Holy Spirit, but the Spiritual Sons also need to be filled with The Holy Spirit.

1 CORINTHIANS 2:14 KJV: BUT THE NATURAL MAN RECEIVED NOT THE THINGS OF THE SPIRIT OF GOD: FOR THEY ARE FOOLISHNESS UNTO HIM: NEITHER CAN HE KNOW THEM BECAUSE THEY ARE SPIRITUALLY DISCERNED.

Allow me the privilege of why I believe my teaching in The Sunday School program was amazingly effective. I taught the Youth and Adult Classes and significantly affected the students because I had tarry meetings for The Baptism into The Holy Spirit. Many received the experience. This made teaching and the teaching acceptable and straightforward, for teacher and student had a relationship with the author of The Word, The Holy Spirit. To understand what the author of The Word is saying, the Spiritual Son must have a relationship with The Holy Spirit through baptism into The Holy Spirit. So be it that Spiritual Fathers are presently in training programs with their Spiritual Sons, and their Spiritual Sons are not baptized into The Holy Spirit. Please take my advice and stop the training program at once. Seek the Face of God and have special tarry services with the Spiritual Sons. When God's people are filled with The Holy Spirit, preachers need not do lots of needless explaining, for The Holy Spirit quickens The Word and the understanding of God's people.

The Spiritual Sons must be aware of the three C's that ensure effective preaching and teaching. These three are:

CONCISE

CLARITY

CONVICTION

CONCISE

Most people have a retention span of half an hour. Once we extend that period, we start to lose our audience. God's Word is vital for the well-being of His people. Therefore, the Ascended Gifted Father must teach the Spiritual Son how to construct sermons to keep people's retention ability within the framework of time.

If ever there was a long-winded preacher, it was I. I had the unique gift of continuation; rest assured, it is not a blessing to the congregation. Long-winded preachers are usually dull.

In the early days of my ministry, I was a member of The Open-Air Ministry of our Church (Open Door Assemblies, Greenwood Park Durban, South Africa). I vividly remember having my first Open Air. I preached for forty-five minutes. The other members of The Open-Air Ministry Team jokingly remarked that I preached so long in The Open Air that my tongue got sunburnt. This undoubtedly taught me a good lesson, and I soon developed the art of being concise.

CLARITY

My dear Pastor was an outstanding preacher and teacher. He was well-versed in The Word of God and very articulate. However, on those occasions, he would get lost in his exceptional command of the English language, and sadly, I would miss what he was saying because he used some high-elongated words. So, I approached him and said (jokingly) that I would leave my Bible at home and instead bring my dictionary when I attended the services. His reply caused me to retract my words, for I saw his good intentions.

Though spiritual, most of the congregants were of meager education. Therefore, my Pastor felt responsible for raising their standard. He conveyed that synonyms would follow if I listened almost immediately after using the elongated word to help the congregation understand. An excellent example of his method is seen in the word omnipotent. Once omnipotent is pronounced, the synonym all-powerful is verbalized with extra emphasis:

GOD IS OMNIPOTENT. THERE IS NOTHING THAT GOD CAN NOT DO. HE IS THE ALL-POWERFUL GOD.

I accepted his explanation with glee and began building up my vocabulary. I bought an excellent dictionary and used it extensively when preparing sermons. I developed the art of using synonyms whenever I felt my audience would lose what I was saying. Like my Pastor, I also nurtured congregations with limited education; therefore, I had no alternative but to implement what my wise Pastor had taught me. However, I have come across several modern-day preachers, acquaintances, and colleagues in the ministry whose sheer delight is to mesmerize their audiences with their phenomenal command of the English language. Words are powerful. However, if people do not understand, words are powerless and meaningless.

CONVICTION

God, The Holy Spirit, plays a vital part in our preaching. Though we prepare to preach through ardent prayer and study, unless The Holy Spirit anoints us, our labor is in vain. Therefore, to ensure an anointing that convicts our audience of sin and brings them to repentance, all preachers must sometimes go beyond the norm.

My dear friend Dr. Ronnie Naidoo often shared how he went beyond the norm to invoke The Holy Spirit's anointing in his preaching and life. Besides having his daily devotions and reading the Bible every day with the intent of reading the entire Bible once a year. Often, he would go exceedingly early to Church to prepare himself spiritually for the Worship Service and his preaching. Furthermore, once he had prepared himself, he would prepare the congregants for the Worship service and the preaching of The Word of God. He would pace The Church floor praying in The Spirit, going from pew to pew and laying hands on each pew (bench), asking God to convict and bless the people who would sit in those respective pews. His heart cry to God was that he would not let

go of God unless God would convict and bless those over whom he had spiritual oversight. (See Genesis 32:22-26 and Acts 20:28) Every year and early in January, he would call a solemn assembly of fasting and prayer for God-glorifying Himself during the congregation in the year ahead. If my memory serves me right, the solemn assembly was for at least two weeks. He also viewed it as a first fruit offering, giving the first part of the coming year exclusively to God. (See Joel 2:15 and Ex 22:29).

This mighty man of God knew of the CONVICTING POWER OF THE HOLY SPIRIT. He read his Bible every day and throughout once a year, knowing that The Holy Spirit honors The Word of God, for He is the author of the Word, no wonder The Word of God is called THE SWORD OF THE SPIRIT (see Ephesians 6:17 and 2Pe 1:21). Dr. Ronnie Naidoo knew how to bring deliverance to his flock. He fasted and prayed (see Mathew 17:21).

My friend and colleague, Dr. Ronnie Naidoo, has done great things for God's glory. In the early years of his ministry, he bought an old Catholic Church building and later built a five thousand-seater auditorium to house his fast-growing assembly. After that, he purchased a hospital to meet the needs of his community. He recently built a school for his community and beyond. We may say WHAT A MAN OF GOD, but knowing him so well, he would exclaim: WHAT A GOD OF A MAN."

With all the great things that this mighty man of God has achieved for God's glory, one feat surpasses all. That which stands head and shoulders of all his great work is THE REPRODUCING OF MINISTRY. He has an Apostolic team of full-time Ministers who receive a livable monthly stipend (salary). These Apostolic team ministers minister alongside him in The Church, the hospital, and the school. His mentality is far removed from many renowned Ministers of our day, who have A STAFF MENTALITY. PASTOR RONNIE NAIDOO HAS ASCENDED GIFTED MEN AND WOMEN OF GOD AS HIS EQUALS WORKING ALONGSIDE HIM.

Outstanding results for God in the ministry are birthed through hard work, prayer and fasting, and the anointing of The Holy Spirit, who is none other than THE AUTHOR OF THE WORD.

JOHN 16:8: AND WHEN HE COMES, HE WILL CONVICT THE WORLD CONCERNING SIN AND RIGHTEOUSNESS AND JUDGMENT:

The wise Spiritual Father, by the Grace of God and the enablement of The Holy Spirit, must bring the Spiritual Son to a definite understanding that all that we do for God can only be achieved by the unction and anointing of The Holy Spirit. The Spiritual Son must realize that it is The Holy Spirit who enables him as he continually yields to the Spirit

ZECHARIAH 4:6: THEN HE SAID TO ME, "THIS IS THE WORD OF THE LORD TO ZERUBBABEL: NOT BY MIGHT, NOR BY POWER, BUT BY MY SPIRIT, SAYS THE LORD OF HOSTS.

I cannot move away from this vital section without conveying several preaching tips for those dear Ascended Gifted SPIRITUAL FATHERS who delight in reproducing their ministries in the Spiritual Sons:

KNOW YOUR AUDIENCE

BE YOURSELF

USE SIMPLE LANGUAGE AND VOICE CONTROL

THE USE OF SCRIPTURE

EYE CONTACT

AVOID EXCESSIVE MOBILITY

DRESS CODE

KNOW YOUR AUDIENCE

The visiting program of the Pastor is essential for good and relevant preaching and teaching. Preachers do not get to know their congregation by preaching to them; they get to know their members by visiting them regularly and having fellowship with them and their families. Therefore, the Spiritual Son must accompany the Pastor on his visitation program, for he discovers the true heart of the people he will Pastor one day.

As the Spiritual Son grows in his preaching ministry, he will receive invitations from Youth Groups and Churches. To preach outside his home congregation, the Spiritual Son must obtain permission from his Father. The Spiritual Son must realize that he is still in training, and if allowed to go, he represents his Church. If possible, it would be good for the Spiritual Father to accompany the Spiritual Son to appraise his

effort. If not, it would be wise to send a senior member of The Church along with him. Helping the maturing son would be wise for the Father to support the Spiritual Son with his sermon. Instruct the Spiritual Son to write the sermon to check for errors and suggest improving the sermon.

To aid the Son in being effective outside of the home Church, it would be wise that the Spiritual Son accompanies the Spiritual Father when preaching in other Churches. Much may be gleaned from this important exercise. Observing the Spiritual Father preaching and teaching in other Churches will give the Spiritual Son much information on how he ought to conduct himself when preaching outside of his home Church.

BE YOURSELF

One of the most embarrassing moments of my first preaching ministry was when I almost carbon-copied a sermon from a renowned preacher. I repeatedly listened to Morris Cerullo, minister on the preservation of The Jewish nation. My rendition of his sermon was not word for word, but not one iota of the sermon was mine. I was positive that the audience knew that something was awry. After the conclusion of the service, I hurriedly excused myself. I went home and cried my eyes out, and I vowed to The Lord that I would never imitate another man of God and use his sermon as though it was mine. I served the Lord for about nine months then and yet had not read and studied David's rejection of putting on Saul's armor when he was to face Goliath in combat. David's faith was in The Lord, who gave him the strength to kill the bear and the lion. So ascended, Gifted Spiritual Fathers must encourage their Spiritual Sons to be themselves, never to mimic their Spiritual Fathers.

Lecturing at the various Bible Colleges and Schools of Ministry, I often became very unpopular with some students. Many were expressing an acute American accent. Most of the students wanted to sound like American preachers. Another ethnic group had a problem in dropping the H. They would not pronounce the word HAPPY instead of APPY, yet they had the uncanny way of rolling the R as Americans. To correct this, I said, "What is the purpose of rolling the R and then dropping "the H." Another ethnic group sounded American in so many ways. A few students had gone with a certain Evangelist on an evangelical excursion to America for a few weeks, and strange enough, they lost their South African accent in such a short time. They had returned to South Africa,

and several months after their American excursion, they were still talking as Americans. I addressed this as best as possible, emphasizing that our fellow South African Christian audiences ridiculed them and were not paying attention to their preaching.

Many may say I was harsh in correcting these students. However, what was at stake was not just their future ministries but also the audience. Spiritual Fathers often correct their Spiritual Sons with a firm hand. However, correcting and chastising must be done with love and care.

LANGUAGE AND VOICE CONTROL

Over the years, I have listened to countless preachers and, may I add, blessed. However, there were and are those certain preachers that I struggle to listen to. Although their preaching is sound and doctrinally correct, they cannot arrest and keep my attention because there is no emotion in their voice. They speak with one monotone. Their voices never fluctuate in volume. God uses our lifestyle and voice tones to convey The Gospel of Jesus Christ. As much as we must live a righteous life, we also must learn the art of using our voice effectively. The Father must teach his Spiritual Sons the art of showing joy, sorrow, anger, and contentment in his voice. To stress the crucial parts of the sermon, preachers raise the volume and tone of their voices. This is essential as it helps the congregation to grasp what God wants them to know and apply.

Words can paint a picture in people's minds, so preachers must have a good command of their vernacular. Adjectives are descriptive, which is why good preachers use them in their sermons. However, illustrations should be brief and straightforward. Words are influential to the extent that they can make or break a sermon. Therefore, always, we must choose our words wisely. Several years ago, I used an Afrikaans word while preaching. The term was "TWAK," which speaks of harmful tobacco. It also means rubbish. Several people in the congregation were offended by me for using the word; to this day, many still hold it against me. Was I wrong in using the word "TWAK"? As I reflect, I must admit I was, however, done in all innocence:

2 TIMOTHY 1:13: HOLD FAST THE FORM OF SOUND WORDS, WHICH THOU HAST HEARD OF ME, IN FAITH AND LOVE WHICH IS IN CHRIST JESUS.

It is good that we learn from our experiences; however, it is even better when our Spiritual Sons learn from our preaching mishaps. Therefore, the wise Spiritual Father will instill in the Spiritual Son never to use slang when preaching.

SCRIPTURE USAGE

God's people must note the preaching, whether biblical or not biblical. Furthermore, it is common these days to hear preachers speak without reading the Scripture. Some minister for ten to fifteen minutes before a Scripture is mentioned or read. This is like the preacher placing his sermon into The Holy Scripture. In contrast, when the wise preacher reads The Holy Scripture before beginning his sermon, it presents the understanding that the sermon has its roots in The Holy Scripture.

Another very vital essential is the wise usage of Scripture throughout the sermon. In my early years of salvation, a preacher very often ministered at our Church. He was well-liked and lovingly received by the congregants, except for a few other young men and me. We respected him, but we had a problem with his excessive use of Scripture. Throughout his sermon, he would quote Scripture. His sermon was Scripture. There was extraordinarily little explanation in his preaching. A wise preacher realizes that hearing God's Word builds faith. However, a methodical (systematic, organized) preacher knows people grapple (struggle) with what is preached without explanation of Scripture. Therefore, although we must quote Scripture in our sermons, we must not do it excessively. I am of the persuasion; besides the opening scripture reading, we must quote not more than six to eight Scriptures.

EYE CONTACT

The International Assemblies of God missionaries have played a dominant part in the development of my ministry. Not only did I attend an International Assemblies of God Bible College, but I was also trained in Tent Crusades. As students, we went on evangelical tent crusades with the resident missionary Evangelist. This man was a mighty preacher with one defect. He never engaged his audience through eye contact. He always focused his eyes upward, and somehow as young as I was in The Lord, I felt there was a strong possibility that many in the audience lost interest. Looking people in the eye while preaching may be a searchlight into the very recesses of their souls. Many may not agree, but I am of the persuasion. It helps bring conviction.

AVOID EXCESSIVE MOBILITY

Watching tennis is often strenuous exercise. Our heads continually move from left to right as we watch the ball smash from one end of the court to the other. Often spectators end up with sore and stiff necks. Many congregants listening to some preachers end up with painful and stiff necks. How is this possible? The preacher moves from one end of the podium to the other constantly. He never stays behind the pulpit. He is on the move all the time while preaching. This is not good practice for good preaching. The pulpit is there for a purpose. It is where you stand and convey The Word of God to the congregants. Excessive mobility robs the sermon of its intent and blessing. As a result, many congregants lose interest in the preaching, for their focus is on the continual mobility of the Preacher.

DRESS CODE

God does not look on the outside. God looks within. The adage, clothes make a man is not valid. However, what we wear does convey a message. Most modern-day preachers dress up like teenagers, with jeans, a shirt hanging over the jeans, and running shoes. The suit and tie days are long gone. I am persuaded that there is a time and place for everything, and may I add different attire? As a preacher, I dress accordingly when invited to minister to a Youth Group. I wear jeans, tucked my shirt in, and running shoes. When I dress like that when ministering to the youth, I identify with them. However, when I minister at The Worship service or Evangelical Campaigns, I wear a suit and tie and make sure my shoes shine. Many may say I am of the old school. I am just biblical. The Old Testament Priesthood wore unique clothing. Jesus, our Saviour, also wore a particular garment the soldiers gambled for. Dressing up and making one presentable is not being religious. It is simply a good ambassador for King Jesus.

SUMMARY

- ✓ The greatest blessing (other than salvation through Jesus) afforded to man by God is the ability to reproduce after his kind.
- ✓ Just as God created man in his image and likeness, so has God empowered man to reproduce after his kind.
- ✓ Just as God created man in his image and likeness, in like manner are Spiritual Fathers to reproduce after their kind.
- ✓ God's two-fold blessing is that we prosper and reproduce.

- ✓ The three successful principles for natural and spiritual parenting are protection, provision, and promotion,
- ✓ God calls those whom others regard insignificant.
- ✓ Idleness breeds sins
- ✓ Endeavoring to cover up sin leads to more sin.
- ✓ God disciplines his servants
- ✓ True repentance ensures forgiveness and honor from God.
- ✓ Biographical studies are essential to the development of the ministry.
- ✓ Frustration in the ministry may lead to anger, which robs the man God of God's intended blessings.
- ✓ Anger blots out God's command.
- ✓ The greatness of ministry is seen in our love for God and his people.
- ✓ The three Cs of preaching are vital for sound preaching.
- ✓ Excessive mobility may be a distraction to our preaching.
- ✓ As servants of God, our dress code must be becoming.

STUDY TO SHOW YOURSELF APPROVED UNTO GOD

1. List and explain the three natural and spiritual ingredients for effective parenting.
 2. One of the three ingredients for effective parenting is the most effective.
 3. Why should we, as Spiritual Fathers, and Spiritual Sons, always concentrate on character?
 4. List and briefly explain the four temperaments of men and women.
 5. Why are there so many varied interpretations of Doctrine?
 6. How are we, as students going to avoid misinterpretations?
 7. List and explain The Golden Rules of Counselling.
 8. Define Homiletics.
 9. List and briefly explain THE 3 Cs of effective preaching.
-

CHAPTER 19

THE IMPORTANT ROLE OF BIBLE COLLEGES AND BIBLE SCHOOLS

1. OBSERVATIONS ABOUT THE MODERN-DAY CHURCH

Much is taking place in The Body of Christ. Praise God. The Present-day Church is experiencing a mighty deluge of God's Grace and Power. Revival streams are throughout the world. However, even as The Holy Spirit brings in the harvest of souls, the powers of darkness are also at work. False doctrine permeates the Body of Christ. Churches have become commercialized. Mighty men of God who once were stalwarts in God's work have succumbed to Satan's wiles. Sadly, the role of The Set Man Principle and The Senior Pastor is misconstrued. In many Independent Local Churches and Denominations, countless Men of God are not reproducing after their kind. Spiritual Sons are rarely raised to continue the work of The Lord; instead, natural Spiritual Sons and daughters inherit Local Churches.

Bible Colleges and Schools of Ministry are frowned upon in many Church circles. However, those coming up against a Biblical mode of Spiritual Education are using Scripture to verify and augment (strengthen) their weird beliefs:

1 JOHN 2:27: BUT THE ANOINTING THAT YOU RECEIVED FROM HIM ABIDES IN YOU, AND YOU HAVE NO NEED THAT ANYONE SHOULD TEACH YOU. BUT AS HIS ANOINTING TEACHES YOU ABOUT EVERYTHING, AND IS TRUE, AND IS NO LIE—JUST AS IT HAS TAUGHT YOU, ABIDE IN HIM.

1 JOHN 4:1-6: BELOVED, DO NOT BELIEVE EVERY SPIRIT, BUT TEST THE SPIRITS TO SEE WHETHER THEY ARE FROM GOD, FOR MANY FALSE PROPHETS HAVE GONE OUT INTO THE WORLD. ² BY THIS YOU KNOW THE SPIRIT OF GOD: EVERY SPIRIT THAT CONFESSES THAT JESUS

CHRIST HAS COME IN THE FLESH IS FROM GOD, ³ AND EVERY SPIRIT THAT DOES NOT CONFESS JESUS IS NOT FROM GOD. THIS IS THE SPIRIT OF THE ANTICHRIST, WHICH YOU HEARD WAS COMING AND NOW IS IN THE WORLD ALREADY. ⁴ LITTLE CHILDREN, YOU ARE FROM GOD AND HAVE OVERCOME THEM, FOR HE WHO IS IN YOU IS GREATER THAN HE WHO IS IN THE WORLD. ⁵ THEY ARE FROM THE WORLD; THEREFORE, THEY SPEAK FROM THE WORLD, AND THE WORLD LISTENS TO THEM. ⁶ WE ARE FROM GOD. WHOEVER KNOWS GOD LISTENS TO US; WHOEVER IS NOT FROM GOD DOES NOT LISTEN TO US. BY THIS, WE KNOW THE SPIRIT OF TRUTH AND THE SPIRIT OF ERROR.

Teachers are a significant and integral part of The Fivefold Ministry. Without the Teaching ministry, there would be much confusion. Using the Context Principle of Hermeneutics, a large section of 1 John 4 deals with the anti-Christ's spirit. The Chapter deals with the anti-Christ and his deception. Therefore, we need not be concerned about what the Scripture says, for no deception from the false winds of doctrine would negatively influence us. The mere fact, the truth of God's Word, is embedded (rooted) in your spirit. The very Truth of God's Word revolts against the false teachings. And therefore, 1 John 4 teaches us that we need no false teachers to teach us.

In the past thirty years, scores of Ascended Gifted Ministers have left their denominations to start Independent Churches. Their main reason for the massive exodus was that they felt hemmed in by principles of governance based on democracy. They openly declared that Deacon Boards and the power of the congregational voting system controlled their decision-making to the extent that they were frustrated, and the ministry became insipid. Therefore, they were eager to embrace Theocracy (divine guidance according to God's Word). However, many Local Churches could not ignore the ongoing issues which influenced the Leadership adversely. And therefore, they confronted the prevailing problems head-on and moved from the principles of Democracy to the principles of Theocracy.

The Church is governed via principles of democracy and principles of theocracy. And therefore, the Spiritual Father must instruct the Spiritual

Sons in the Biblical Examples of democracy and theocracy with the understanding to employ each facet of governance as The Word of God expresses at certain times and examples. (DO PRAY FOR ME; I AM OF THE PERSUASION THAT GOD WANTS ME TO WRITE A BOOKLET ON CHURCH GOVERNANCE).

THE TREE MUST BE BENT WHEN IT IS YOUNG

Much of our present leadership is seasoned and set in their beliefs. When trying to straighten their views, all we will accomplish is breaking them and entering futile debates and arguments. Our hope to bring meaningful and Scriptural change lies with the youth and new converts. The means of bringing about significant change and good Christian order is to revert to the principles of God's Word. I am of firm conviction, and I believe it is of The Holy Spirit that, as never before, we must revive the dynamic and influential role that Bible Colleges and Bible Schools have played in educating The Body of Christ in times past. We must instill the principles of God's Word into our youth and new converts. All the issues mentioned above can only be dealt with when converts are trained in The Word of God:

PROVERBS 22:6: TRAIN UP A CHILD IN THE WAY HE SHOULD GO, AND WHEN HE IS OLD, HE WILL NOT DEPART FROM IT.

2. THE BIBLICAL EVIDENCE AND FUNCTION OF THE SCHOOLS OF THE SPIRITUAL SONS OF THE PROPHETS

I was Born-Again in 1975 and entered Bible School the same year. To my astonishment, many congregants of The Church I attended were not in favor of attending Bible School. Many were of the persuasion that Bible Colleges were not of The Lord. Some vehemently exclaimed that it was of the devil.

Another Local Church with whom our Church had a strong affinity openly discouraged God's people from attending Bible School. Their Leadership preached against Bible Schools from their pulpit. I was confused, but thanks to my brother in The Lord, Pastor Glenn Horner, I continued at Bible School because of his encouragement.

Over the years I have served The Lord, I pondered why this ridiculous attitude was prevalent. I have produced several answers:

IGNORANCE

INSECURITY

UNETHICAL PRACTICES MAR RELATIONSHIPS

IGNORANCE

Thomas Gray's wise words spell out the folly of ignorance:

"WHERE IGNORANCE IS BLISS, 'IT IS FOLLY TO BE WISE."

The Wiktionary Dictionary defines it as:

THE LACK OF KNOWLEDGE RESULTS IN HAPPINESS. YOU ARE MORE COMFORTABLE IF YOU DO NOT KNOW SOMETHING.

I understand the phrase: WHAT WE DO NOT KNOW DOES NOT AFFECT US. Therefore, those unaware that Bible Schools have their roots in The Word of God are not affected by the consequence of the Scriptural existence of Bible Schools. By this, I am simply saying that there is no need for them to attend because of their lack of knowledge, for to them, it does not exist. However, this knowledge undoubtedly affects those who see Bible Schools as a Scriptural means of training for the ministry. Therefore, this knowledge allows them to attend or not attend Bible School.

On close examination of The Old Testament, it is blatantly clear that there is a definite mention of the School of The Prophets. Therefore, those who acknowledge Bible Colleges and Bible Schools have their roots in The Old Testament School of The Prophets. Therefore, they use this knowledge to confirm the urgent need for Bible Colleges and Bible Schools ministries for our day. However, whether we accept Bible Colleges and Schools or not, we cannot ignore the responsibility that lies with every Born-Again Spirit-filled servant and handmaiden of The Lord to ARDENTLY STUDY THE WORD OF GOD.

2 TIMOTHY 2:15: DO YOUR BEST TO PRESENT YOURSELF TO GOD AS ONCE APPROVED, A WORKER WHO HAS NO NEED TO BE ASHAMED RIGHTLY HANDLES THE WORD OF TRUTH.

Though titles of certain doctrines and truths are not recorded in The Holy Scriptures, it does not obliterate the doctrine and the reality of its existence. Two classic examples are the doctrine of The Trinity and The Rapture of The Church. The words Trinity and Rapture do not appear in the Bible; however, these doctrines are fundamental to The Body of Christ. No doubt, as we consider the scriptural evidence of the doctrine of The Trinity and The Rapture of The Church throughout The Old and New Testaments, God exists in three persons, and The Church escapes The Tribulation Period via The Rapture. Unfortunately, many of God's people miss the revelations of God's Word, for they look for a specific word and not the truth of the matter. Just as ardent students have discovered the revelation of The Trinity and The Rapture, in the same way, we can find the validity of The Schools of The Prophets. All we must do is apply ourselves diligently to study. The Old Testament shows the existence of The School of The Prophets, although the word School is not mentioned.

Those who constantly come up against the training of Ministers via Bible Schools do not understand the importance of biblical education. My eldest daughter, Yolanda, recently blessed me with a marvelous book – THE HISTORY OF THE KING JAMES VERSION BIBLE. I was captivated to read how The Roman Catholic and Anglican Churches kept The Word of God out of the hands of God's people. Many people of God were killed for having a copy of The Bible. Those concerted efforts to translate the Vulgate were either ostracized or killed.

We may ask, why unnecessary persecution? First, it ensures the ignorance of the people. Throughout history, it has always been the intellectuals that ruled and controlled the masses. If the Bible was not in the hands of the ordinary people, they were dependent on the leadership of their clergy.

The ardent study of God's word has a great reward:

2 TIMOTHY 3:15 NKJV: AND THAT FROM A CHILD THOU HAST KNOWN THE HOLY SCRIPTURES, WHICH CAN MAKE THEE WISE UNTO SALVATION THROUGH FAITH WHICH IS IN CHRIST JESUS.

Though many of God's people may be against Bible Schools, they are not against Bible education. On the contrary, once they are made aware of how Bible Schools came about in The Old Testament, they readily accept the authenticity of the Bible Schools as part of our modern Biblical education.

The phrase "Sons of The Prophets" is recorded ten times in the Old Testament (see 1Ki 20:35; 2Ki 2:3, 5, 7, 15; 2Ki 4:1, 38; 2Ki 5:22; 2Ki 6:1). These Spiritual Sons were not the physical-Spiritual Sons of The Prophets; These young men were set aside for training as Prophets. These Spiritual Sons of The Prophets were to continue where their Spiritual Fathers left. A classic example is Elijah (the Spiritual Father) and Elisha (the Spiritual Son). It is common knowledge that Spiritual Sons inherit from their Spiritual Fathers. No wonder Elisha asked his Spiritual Father for a double portion of his spirit (see 2Ki 2:9). Reading the above Scriptures, we note their number was innumerable.

2 KINGS 6:1: NOW THE SONS OF THE PROPHETS SAID TO ELISHA, "SEE, THE PLACE WHERE WE DWELL UNDER YOUR CHARGE IS TOO SMALL FOR US.

Where were these Spiritual Sons of The Prophets housed? Imagine the catastrophe if they all lived with their Spiritual Father, the answer absolute mayhem. Imagine how hard the wife of the Spiritual Father would have to work, cooking, washing clothes, and caring for this multitude. The Bible gives us a definite clue about where they lived.

The Spiritual Sons of The Prophets were housed at The School of the Prophets. This is clear when we consider the following Scripture:

2 KINGS 15: 9-11: SO NAAMAN CAME WITH HIS HORSES AND CHARIOTS AND STOOD AT THE DOOR OF ELISHA'S HOUSE. ¹⁰AND ELISHA SENT A MESSENGER TO HIM, SAYING, "GO AND WASH IN THE JORDAN SEVEN TIMES, AND YOUR FLESH SHALL BE RESTORED, AND YOU SHALL BE CLEAN." ¹¹BUT NAAMAN WAS ANGRY AND WENT AWAY, SAYING, "BEHOLD, I THOUGHT THAT HE WOULD SURELY COME OUT TO ME AND STAND AND CALL UPON THE NAME OF THE LORD HIS GOD, AND WAVE HIS HAND OVER THE PLACE AND CURE THE LEPER.

Naaman, the Syrian general, stood at the door of **Elisha's home**. It is interesting to note who came out to converse with Naaman. It was neither Elisha nor one of the Spiritual Sons of The Prophets; it was a messenger. The Bible, in Basic English, uses the word servant, not the messenger. The servant was none other than Gehazi (see 2Ki 4:31; 2Ki 5:25). Certainly, with this information, we can conclude that Elisha, when instructing the Spiritual Sons of the Prophets, lived with them. However, when not training them, he lived in his own home, as seen in 2Ki 5:9. The place that became too small for the Spiritual Sons of The Prophets to live in was one of the several schools of The Prophets Spiritual Sons.

During the period of Samuel, Elijah, and Elisha's ministries, there were five Schools of the Spiritual Sons of The Prophets:

RAMAH (1Sam 10:5)

KIRYAT YEARIM (1Sam 7:2)

GILGAL (2Kins 4:38)

BETHEL (2Kings 2:3)

JERICHO (2Kings 2:15)

After Samuel, the Judge, Priest, and Prophet anointed Saul with oil as commander over God's inheritance, Samuel instructed Saul to go to Gilgal, where there was a School of the Spiritual Sons of The Prophets.

1 SAMUEL 10:1-14: MESSAGE BIBLE: SAMUEL TOOK A FLASK OF OIL, Poured it on Saul's head, and kissed him. He said, "Do you see what this means? God has anointed you, prince, over his people.

"This sign will confirm God's anointing of you as prince over his inheritance: After you leave me today, as you get closer to your home country of Benjamin, you'll meet two men near Rachel's tomb. They'll say, 'The donkeys you went to look for are found. Your father has forgotten about the donkeys and is worried about you, wringing his hands—quite beside himself!'

³⁻⁴ "Leaving there, you'll arrive at the oak of Tabor. There you'll meet three men going up to worship God at Bethel. One will be

CARRYING THREE YOUNG GOATS, ANOTHER CARRYING THREE SACKS OF BREAD, AND THE THIRD A JUG OF WINE. THEY'LL SAY, 'HELLO, HOW ARE YOU?' AND OFFER YOU TWO LOAVES OF BREAD, WHICH YOU WILL ACCEPT.

⁵⁻⁶ "NEXT, YOU'LL COME TO GIBEAH OF GOD, WHERE THERE'S A PHILISTINE GARRISON. AS YOU APPROACH THE TOWN, YOU'LL RUN INTO A BUNCH OF PROPHETS COMING DOWN FROM THE SHRINE, PLAYING HARPS AND TAMBOURINES, FLUTES, AND DRUMS. AND THEY'LL BE PROPHECYING. BEFORE YOU KNOW IT, THE SPIRIT OF GOD WILL COME ON YOU, AND YOU'LL BE PROPHECYING RIGHT ALONG WITH THEM. AND YOU'LL BE TRANSFORMED. YOU'LL BE A NEW PERSON!

⁷ "WHEN THESE CONFIRMING SIGNS ARE ACCOMPLISHED, YOU'LL KNOW THAT YOU'RE READY: WHATEVER JOB YOU'RE GIVEN TO DO, DO IT. GOD IS WITH YOU!

⁸ "NOW, GO DOWN TO GILGAL, AND I WILL FOLLOW. I'LL COME DOWN AND JOIN YOU IN WORSHIP BY SACRIFICING BURNT OFFERINGS AND PEACE OFFERINGS. WAIT SEVEN DAYS. THEN I'LL COME AND TELL YOU WHAT TO DO NEXT."

⁹ SAUL TURNED AND LEFT SAMUEL. AT THAT MOMENT, GOD TRANSFORMED HIM—MADE HIM A NEW PERSON! AND ALL THE CONFIRMING SIGNS TOOK PLACE ON THE SAME DAY.

SAUL, AMONG THE PROPHETS

¹⁰⁻¹² WHEN SAUL AND HIS PARTY GOT TO GIBEAH, THERE WERE THE PROPHETS RIGHT IN FRONT OF THEM! BEFORE HE KNEW IT, THE SPIRIT OF GOD CAME ON SAUL, AND HE WAS PROPHECYING RIGHT ALONG WITH THEM. WHEN THOSE WHO HAD PREVIOUSLY KNOWN SAUL SAW HIM PROPHECYING WITH THE PROPHETS, THEY WERE SURPRISED. "WHAT'S GOING ON HERE? WHAT'S COME OVER THE SON OF KISH? HOW ON EARTH DID SAUL GET TO BE A PROPHET?" ONE MAN SPOKE UP AND SAID, "WHO STARTED THIS? WHERE DID THESE PEOPLE EVER COME FROM?"

THAT'S HOW THE SAYING GOT STARTED, "SAUL AMONG THE PROPHETS!
WHO WOULD HAVE GUESSED?"

¹³⁻¹⁴ WHEN SAUL WAS DONE PROPHECYING, HE RETURNED HOME. HIS UNCLE
ASKED HIM AND HIS SERVANT, "SO, WHERE HAVE YOU TWO BEEN ALL THIS
TIME?"

"OUT LOOKING FOR THE DONKEYS. WE LOOKED AND LOOKED AND
COULDN'T FIND THEM. AND THEN WE FOUND SAMUEL!"

The school of the Spiritual Sons of The Prophets at Gilgal continued to
the time of Elijah and Elisha. We read that just before Elijah's departure
to Heaven, with Elisha, he goes on one final tour of The School of the
Spiritual Sons of The Prophets. These Schools were situated at Bethel and
Jericho:

2 KINGS 2:5-12: THE SONS OF THE PROPHETS WHO WERE AT JERICHO DREW
NEAR TO ELISHA AND SAID TO HIM, "DO YOU KNOW THAT TODAY THE LORD
WILL TAKE AWAY YOUR MASTER FROM OVER YOU?" AND HE ANSWERED,
"YES, I KNOW IT; KEEP QUIET." ⁶ THEN ELIJAH SAID TO HIM, "PLEASE STAY
HERE, FOR THE LORD HAS SENT ME TO THE JORDAN." BUT HE SAID, "AS THE
LORD LIVES, AND AS YOU LIVE, I WILL NOT LEAVE YOU." SO, THE TWO OF
THEM WENT ON. ⁷ FIFTY MEN OF THE SONS OF THE PROPHETS ALSO WENT
AND STOOD AT SOME DISTANCE FROM THEM, AS THEY BOTH WERE
STANDING BY THE JORDAN. ⁸ THEN ELIJAH TOOK HIS CLOAK AND ROLLED IT
UP AND STRUCK THE WATER, AND THE WATER WAS PARTED TO THE ONE
SIDE AND THE OTHER, TILL THE TWO OF THEM, COULD GO OVER ON DRY
GROUND. ⁹ WHEN THEY HAD CROSSED, ELIJAH SAID TO ELISHA, "ASK WHAT I
SHALL DO FOR YOU BEFORE I AM TAKEN FROM YOU." AND ELISHA SAID,
"PLEASE LET THERE BE A DOUBLE PORTION OF YOUR SPIRIT ON ME." ¹⁰ AND
HE SAID, "YOU HAVE ASKED A HARD THING; YET, IF YOU SEE ME AS I AM
BEING TAKEN FROM YOU, IT SHALL BE SO FOR YOU, BUT IF YOU DO NOT SEE
ME, IT SHALL NOT BE SO." ¹¹ AND AS THEY STILL WENT ON AND TALKED,
BEHOLD, CHARIOTS OF FIRE AND HORSES OF FIRE SEPARATED THE TWO OF
THEM. AND ELIJAH WENT UP BY A WHIRLWIND INTO HEAVEN. ¹² AND ELISHA

SAW IT, AND HE CRIED, "MY FATHER, MY FATHER! THE CHARIOTS OF ISRAEL AND ITS HORSEMEN!" AND HE SAW HIM NO MORE.

Other than the schools mentioned above, Samuel, the judge, priest, and prophet, had a school at Ramah. This was the birthplace and home of the great man of God.

1 SAMUEL 7:17: THEN HE WOULD RETURN TO RAMAH, FOR HIS HOME WAS THERE, AND HE ALSO JUDGED ISRAEL. AND HE BUILT THERE AN ALTAR TO THE LORD.

1 SAMUEL 19:18-20: SO, DAVID FLED AND ESCAPED, AND WENT TO SAMUEL AT RAMAH, AND TOLD HIM ALL THAT SAUL HAD DONE TO HIM. AND HE AND SAMUEL WENT AND STAYED IN NAIOTH. NOW IT WAS TOLD SAUL, SAYING, "TAKE NOTE, DAVID IS AT NAIOTH IN RAMAH! "THEN SAUL SENT MESSENGERS TO TAKE DAVID. AND WHEN THEY SAW THE GROUP OF PROPHETS PROPHECYING AND SAMUEL STANDING AS LEADER OVER THEM, THE SPIRIT OF GOD CAME UPON THE MESSENGERS OF SAUL, AND THEY ALSO PROPHECIED.

Undoubtedly, The Old Testament had a definite structure to train men for the ministry. The Prophet Samuel gave rise to The School of the Spiritual Sons of The Prophets ministry. The Spiritual Father Elijah also had a School of the Prophets. No wonder The New Testament teaches The Church an invaluable truth:

1 TIMOTHY 3:16-17: GOD BREATHES OUT ALL SCRIPTURE AND IS PROFITABLE FOR TEACHING, FOR REPROOF, FOR CORRECTION, AND FOR TRAINING IN RIGHTEOUSNESS, ¹⁷ THAT THE MAN OF GOD MAY BE COMPLETE, EQUIPPED FOR EVERY GOOD WORK.

Thank God for denominations like Assemblies of God, The Full Gospel, The Church of God, The Apostolic Faith Mission of South Africa, and many more Denominations throughout the world that have enriched The Body of Christ with their many Bible Colleges and Schools of Ministry. I am also so grateful to God that the attitude of many of God's people

throughout The Body of Christ is changing toward Bible Schools and Bible Colleges. However, there are still countless numbers who are opposed to their existence.

There were three Lecturers, The Prophets Samuel, Elijah, and Elisha. Samuel lectured at Ramah and was revered by his Spiritual Sons. They addressed him as "Father."

1 SAMUEL 10:12: AND A MAN OF THE PLACE ANSWERED, "AND WHO IS THEIR FATHER?" THEREFORE, IT BECAME A PROVERB, "IS SAUL ALSO AMONG US?"

1 KINGS 2:3: AND THE SONS OF THE PROPHETS WHO WERE IN BETHEL

I CAME OUT TO ELISHA AND SAID TO HIM, "DO YOU KNOW THAT TODAY THE LORD WILL TAKE AWAY YOUR MASTER FROM OVER YOU?" AND HE SAID, "YES, I KNOW IT; KEEP QUIET."

2 KINGS 2:5: THE SONS OF THE PROPHETS WHO WERE AT JERICHO DREW NEAR TO ELISHA AND SAID TO HIM, "DO YOU KNOW THAT TODAY THE LORD WILL TAKE AWAY YOUR MASTER FROM OVER YOU?" AND HE ANSWERED, "YES, I KNOW IT; KEEP QUIET."

2 KINGS 2:12: ELISHA SAW IT, AND HE CRIED, "MY FATHER, MY FATHER! THE CHARIOTS OF ISRAEL AND ITS HORSEMEN!" AND HE SAW HIM NO MORE. THEN HE TOOK HOLD OF HIS CLOTHES AND TORE THEM INTO TWO PIECES.

2 KINGS 6:3-5: THEN ONE OF THEM SAID, "BE PLEASED TO GO WITH YOUR SERVANTS." AND HE ANSWERED, "I WILL GO." ⁴ SO HE WENT WITH THEM. AND WHEN THEY CAME TO THE JORDAN, THEY CUT DOWN TREES. ⁵ BUT AS ONE WAS FELLING A LOG, HIS AXE HEAD FELL INTO THE WATER, AND HE CRIED OUT, "ALAS, MY MASTER! IT WAS BORROWED."

2 KINGS 4:38-40: ELISHA CAME AGAIN TO GILGAL WHEN THERE WAS A FAMINE IN THE LAND. AND AS THE SONS OF THE PROPHETS WERE SITTING BEFORE HIM, HE SAID TO HIS SERVANT, "SET ON THE LARGE POT, AND BOIL STEW FOR THE SONS OF THE PROPHETS." ³⁹ ONE OF THEM WENT OUT INTO

THE FIELD TO GATHER HERBS AND FOUND A WILD VINE AND GATHERED FROM IT HIS LAP FULL OF WILD GOURDS AND CAME AND CUT THEM UP INTO THE POT OF STEW, NOT KNOWING WHAT THEY WERE. ⁴⁰ AND THEY Poured OUT SOME FOR THE MEN TO EAT. BUT WHILE THEY WERE EATING OF THE STEW, THEY CRIED OUT, "O MAN OF GOD, THERE IS DEATH IN THE POT!" AND THEY COULD NOT EAT IT.

The Old Testament is not clear on what was taught at these schools' However, the Scriptures relating to the GROUP (guild, school) of the Spiritual Sons of the Prophets do give us a good sign:

1 SAMUEL 10:5: AFTER THAT, YOU SHALL COME TO GIBEAHELOHIM, WHERE THERE IS A GARRISON OF THE PHILISTINES. AND THERE, AS SOON AS YOU COME TO THE CITY, YOU WILL MEET A GROUP OF PROPHETS COMING DOWN FROM THE HIGH PLACE WITH HARP, TAMBOURINE, FLUTE, AND LYRE BEFORE THEM, PROPHECYING.

I have purposely underscored the following from the above Scripture:

A STRINGED INSTRUMENT,
A TAMBOURINE,
A FLUTE,
AND A HARP

The group of Prophets was most certainly students at the School of the Prophets. The musical instruments the Spiritual Sons of the Prophets played showed that music was part of the curriculum of their studies. Some were playing musical instruments, and others were prophesying, which convinces us that the art of how to Prophecy was a substantial part of the curriculum.

Like our modern-day Bible Colleges and Schools, the Spiritual Sons of The Prophets schools concentrated on studying God's Word. In addition, the Spiritual Father trained their Spiritual Sons in Forthtelling and Foretelling.

The Old Testament Prophets acted as seers. The Kings consulted the Prophets for counsel and direction in times of national adversity. Therefore, training the Spiritual Sons of The Prophets was highly responsible. The Spiritual Fathers, Samuel, Elijah, and Elijah, were undoubtedly great men of insight who thoroughly understood their roles of ministering to their contemporaries and safeguarding the nation's future by training men of God for future generations. Our mandate is no different from theirs. Just as we carry out our specific responsibilities to our generation, we prepare the youth of our day and new converts to minister to future generations. The challenge is great, but we can rise to meet the challenge through God's Grace and enablement.

INSECURITY

Many Ministers are against their congregants attending Bible Colleges or Bible Schools because they have not studied at Bible Schools. They are afraid those who attend might outgrow their knowledge; therefore, they speak vehemently against these forms of Bible education. Congregants soon detected that those who are and were attending Bible College or Bible School outgrew the Pastor. This places undue pressure on the man of God. Therefore, he discourages his congregants from attending Bible College or Bible school. Several of the congregants in the Church I attended, and fortunately, though our Pastor had no Bible College education, he was in no way frustrated. After several of the congregants and I graduated, he decided to attend. This brought a dynamic change to his powerful ministry. The Church blossomed and soon had a testimony of a Church sound in The Word of God.

UNETHICAL PRACTICES MAR RELATIONSHIPS

One of the weaknesses of Bible Colleges and Bible Schools is that many do not work ethically with The Body of Christ. Sadly, some have hidden agendas. God had raised them to serve The Body of Christ and not to serve themselves. Most Bible Colleges and Bible Schools are Denominational, and their purpose, in most cases, is to help their Denomination. Though they are open to all Denominations, they make every effort to proselyte students into their Denominations. Churches have sent their congregants to Bible Colleges and Bible Schools to be soundly educated in The Word of God and return to their Local Churches to strengthen the Local Churches who had sent them to Bible College for that specific reason.

A Bible College within our geographical area had a tremendous spiritual impact on The Churches. It was the most popular Bible educational ministry in the province. All over the region, the people of God attended; As time passed, the tenor and ethos changed, sadly, not for the better. The principal enthusiastically began to entice the students to join his Denomination. Many did, and undoubtedly, the cordial and meaningful relationship that The Local Churches had with the College severed. His Denomination grew, but what an expense. The College lost its once outstanding testimony, not realizing what hurt he had brought to The Body of Christ. Sadly, he went one step further.

His Denomination was multi-ethnic, made up of Black, Colored, and Indian South Africans (I apologize for using this horrible jargon. This is how it was in those days). Like many white foreign missionaries, he felt that the Black South Africans were retarding the growth of the other two ethnic groups. Unfortunately, he made the biggest mistake of his once dynamic and illustrious ministry in overcoming his feeling. He began a Denomination within his Denomination with the two other ethnic groups. He went as far as issuing credentials to all involved once they completed their studies.

Instead of returning to their respective Churches after graduating, they joined his newfound Denomination within a Denomination. The District Superintendent spoke to him and encouraged him to continue with what he had started with some immediate changes that would protect the good name of the denomination. The suggested changes were:

STUDENTS WHO WERE OF THE BIBLE COLLEGE DENOMINATION, ONCE THEY GRADUATED, THEY HAD TO JOIN THE DISTRICT OF THE DENOMINATION FOR THE SERVING OF A TWO-YEAR PROBATION PERIOD BEFORE CREDENTIALS WERE ISSUED AND AS PASTORS OF THE DENOMINATION.

THE STUDENTS FROM OTHER DENOMINATIONS HAD TO GET WRITTEN PERMISSION FROM THEIR RESPECTIVE LEADERSHIP TO BE A PART OF THE INTENSIVE PRACTICAL TRAINING CONDUCTED AT THE BIBLE COLLEGE.

ONCE STUDENTS OF OTHER DENOMINATIONS GRADUATED, THEY WERE TO BE RELEASED BACK TO THE LEADERS OF THEIR RESPECTIVE DENOMINATIONS.

Sadly, there was no compliance. The Missionary Board resolved the problem. Fortunately, he was allowed to complete his four-year term and was strongly recommended to drop his aims. He could finish his four-year term of ministry but could not return to South Africa. Praise God, he repented and continued his missionary ministry in his home country, where his ministry flourished again.

Unfortunately, The Bible College never soared to prominence again, though many new missionaries took the reins. The damage was done, and most Churches in the area had lost respect for that Bible College. And finally, it closed. A once great flourished work of God shut down because of unethical practice.

RESOLVING THE IGNORANCE

Many renowned men and women of God have voiced their opinions on eradicating the ignorance of bible colleges and schools' prominent role in reproducing ministries. However, though many of these suggestions are sound, the best always comes from The Word of God itself:

PSALM 119:130: THE UNFOLDING OF YOUR WORDS GIVES LIGHT; IT IMPARTS UNDERSTANDING TO THE SIMPLE.

The following acronym for LIGHT highlights The Word of God:

LIVING
IN
GOD'S
HEAVENLY
TRUTH

God's Word is truth, and it will always bring illumination. It forever sheds light on that which is obscure and uncertain. Therefore, local Churches and Denominations must begin to promote Bible Colleges and Schools. However, to avoid indifferences and proselyte, future ministers

from the various Denominations and Local Churches must also be members of the Governing Body of The Bible.

RESOLVING INSECURITY

Insecurity robs Ascended Gifted Ministers of God's blessings and intentions. As Ascended Gifted Ministers, we must not be afraid or undermine those with more excellent knowledge. A mighty man of God once said: "WE COMPLEMENT EACH OTHER TO COMPLETE EACH OTHER." The Word of God has a beautiful verse that most encourages how we ought to see and appreciate each other, though our levels of knowledge are not of the same size:

PROVERBS 27:17: AS IRON SHARPENS IRON, SO A MAN SHARPENS THE COUNTENANCE OF HIS FRIEND.

Whenever an Ascended Gifted Minister suffers from the horror of INSECURITY, he does not realize he is doing himself and his congregants a disservice. His INSECURITY robs his congregants of SECURITY. When I consider anyone being INSECURE, I think of myself. I had a limited education. I only have a Junior Certificate, while most ministerial friends and colleagues have a Metric level of formal education. Some have several degrees and Doctorates. I always consoled myself with my adage: "I MIGHT NOT KNOW ALL. HOWEVER, I KNOW GOD, WHO KNOWS IT ALL." I am convinced that knowledge of God and from God depends on our relationship. The more we spend time in worship, praise, and prayer with God, the more excellent knowledge of God and from God will be imparted to us.

HOSEA 4:6: MY PEOPLE ARE DESTROYED FOR LACK OF KNOWLEDGE; BECAUSE YOU HAVE REJECTED KNOWLEDGE, I REJECT YOU FROM BEING A PRIEST TO ME, AND SINCE YOU HAVE FORGOTTEN THE LAW OF YOUR GOD, I ALSO WILL FORGET YOUR CHILDREN.

As I pondered above Scripture, I could not erase the word knowledge from my mind. As I meditated on the word knowledge, I sensed the leading of The Lord to break the word into its two syllables and that being KNOW and LEDGE, and then God spoke:

KNOWLEDGE

**NEVER
OVERPOWERS (OVERRIDES OVERRULES)
WISDOM**

Wisdom and knowledge are interwoven. The Collins English Dictionary defines Wisdom as:

THE ACT OR RESULT OF AN ABILITY TO THINK AND ACT UTILIZING KNOWLEDGE.

Men of God who have not studied at Bible Colleges and Schools need not fear others who have gained knowledge through Bible Colleges and Schools. The Ascended Gift may have less knowledge than others; however, with what he has, he shows forth-great wisdom. Furthermore, he knows how to act out his knowledge via Godly wisdom and humility. I saw this tremendous spiritual trait in a man of God. He was a man of great wisdom and humility. Yes, there was a time when his knowledge was limited, but three spiritual traits made an ordinary man become a great man of God: WISDOM, HUMILITY, AND THE PRESENCE OF GOD.

Be encouraged, Ascended Gifted Men of God, your wisdom and Godly character outshine many whose knowledge surpasses yours. Therefore, be that Man of God that does not fear man, nor his knowledge and accolades, fear God, which is the beginning of wisdom:

PSALM 111:10 NKJV: THE FEAR OF THE LORD IS THE BEGINNING OF WISDOM;
A GOOD UNDERSTANDING HAVE ALL THOSE WHO DO HIS COMMANDMENTS.
HIS PRAISE ENDURES FOREVER.

PROVERBS 9:10: THE FEAR OF THE LORD IS THE BEGINNING OF WISDOM, AND
THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE HOLY ONE IS INSIGHT.

Now that INSECURITY has been dispelled. Therefore, let the vital role of The Bible Colleges and Schools in training men and women for the ministry be promoted in our Local Churches and Denominations. We need not fear. We are creating a solid and unconquerable future for The Body of Christ.

RESOLVING PRACTICES THAT MAR RELATIONSHIPS

The biggest hindrance that robs The Bible Colleges and Schools from fulfilling their Godly mandate of developing men and women for the ministry is BAD RELATIONSHIPS. We have already discussed those Bible Colleges and Schools with hidden agendas that do more harm than good to The Body of Christ. However, there is a simple way to resolve this issue, and again the best means for solving the problem is not finding the best consultant for RELATIONSHIPS. Instead, we must consult God's Word. The Word of God promotes ministerial ethics, and when we honor these ethics, we can rest assured that all our endeavors to reproduce our ministries will be a great success.

The Old Testament book of Nehemiah sets forth some excellent principles of working ethically with our fellow brethren. I believe two things follow when showing respect to other men of God. Firstly, we gain God's approval, and secondly, we get the support and blessing of those to whom we show respect. We understand God called Nehemiah to rebuild Jerusalem. He had a personal mandate from King Artaxerxes to rebuild the walls of Jerusalem. Nehemiah had the king's authority, so he did not need to consult the leaders of Jerusalem. Although Nehemiah had authoritative royal power, he also wanted the blessing and approval of the city's rulers – RESPECT BEGETS RESPECT.

NEHEMIAH 2:16-18: AND THE OFFICIALS DID NOT KNOW WHERE I HAD GONE OR WHAT I WAS DOING, AND I HAD NOT YET TOLD THE JEWS, THE PRIESTS, THE NOBLES, THE OFFICIALS, AND THE REST WHO WERE TO DO THE WORK. THEN I SAID TO THEM, "YOU SEE THE TROUBLE WE ARE IN, HOW JERUSALEM LIES IN RUINS WITH ITS GATES BURNED. COME, LET US BUILD THE WALL OF JERUSALEM, THAT WE MAY NO LONGER SUFFER DERISION." ¹⁸ AND I TOLD THEM OF THE HAND OF MY GOD THAT HAD BEEN UPON ME FOR GOOD, AND ALSO OF THE WORDS THE KING HAD SPOKEN TO ME. AND THEY SAID, "LET US ARISE AND BUILD." SO, THEY STRENGTHENED THEIR HANDS FOR THE GOOD WORK.

Cognizance (awareness) to whom Nehemiah spoke sets forth a relational ethic. He spoke to the city's rulers and not the town's people. Before

enlisting the citizens to help him rebuild Jerusalem, he spoke to the rulers (officials, leaders).

It is alarming that many Missionaries have good intentions yet do not follow Word-based ministerial ethics. To get respect, we must give respect. I am of the persuasion to work ethically with The Body of Christ, and especially all those coming from another country to birth a new ministry must sit down with the spiritual Leaders of the geographical area and make known to them what God has laid upon their heart. Though Nehemiah was a Jew from Shushan, he felt it necessary to bear his heart with the Jewish rulers of Jerusalem.

The Word of God is our example of how we ought to interact with each other as members of The Body of Christ. Not only does Nehemiah of the Old Testament shed light on ministerial ethics, but The New Testament Apostle Paul also sheds light on the subject:

ACTS 15:41: HE WENT THROUGH SYRIA AND CILICIA, STRENGTHENING THE CHURCHES.

The Apostle Paul sets an excellent example of how we should relate to existing Local Churches. Paul and Barnabas started these Churches during their first missionary journey. Paul now goes on his second missionary journey with one aim: to strengthen the existing Churches. His aim was not to start new Churches.

Paul, the Apostle to the Gentiles, could have gone with the intent of birthing new Churches. But, first, it would be wise to ask, WHY WAS THIS NOT HIS INTENTION?

Apostle Paul respected the leadership of these Churches; he and Barnabas had founded. He was a wise Spiritual Father who believed in his Spiritual Sons. Paul went to strengthen them so that they may give birth to new Churches. His vision was that just as he birthed new Spiritual Sons and daughters through God's grace and power, The Churches of Syria and Galatia would do likewise.

Whenever God's servants forego ministerial ethics, problems arise that will retard the growth of The Body of Christ. Therefore, let us adopt

Nehemiah and Paul's religious ethics in our relationships with The Body of Christ. We are called to strengthen The Body of Christ and not to injure The Body of Christ.

Other than sharing their vision of setting up a Bible College or Bible School with the spiritual Leaders of the area, The Bible College Leadership should also co-opt several of the leaders of the various Churches in the area onto their Advisory Board. Better still, allow the leaders of the geographical location to appoint a few resident Pastors to become Advisors to the leadership of the Bible College or School. This wise action ensures that no hidden agendas operate. Furthermore, these actions support the relationship between The Bible College or School and the Churches.

COMPREHENSION

The main reasons why a segment of the modern Church is not living up to the grave responsibility of reproducing ministry are:

- Misconceptions of the Set Man principle
- Misconceptions of the seniority of Ascended Gifted Ministries.

Many saints of God oppose the ministry of Bible Colleges because of the following:

Ignorance

Insecurity

Unethical practices

There were five Schools of the Spiritual Sons of The Prophets:

The School at Ramah

The School at Kiryat yearim

The School at Gilgal

The School at Bethel

The School at Jericho.

READER'S NOTES

CHAPTER 20 APPRENTICESHIPS

Interestingly, although The Schools of the Prophets were prominent in Samuel, Elijah, and Elisha days, not all who became Prophets attended The Schools of the Prophets. However, today, those who appreciate the outstanding work of Bible Colleges and Schools insist that whoever enters the ministry must have attended Bible College or Bible School. In addition, many Denominations need a Diploma in Theology or a Degree in Theology.

My first call from God was to be an Ascended Gifted Evangelist and Teacher (see Ephesians 4:8-16). I have been in the ministry since 1980. I have lectured in two Bible Colleges and four Bible Schools. In addition, I had the privilege of being a principal and a vice principal. Those are years of teaching and lecturing experience, not just tutoring people but also getting to know them. As much as I believe in the vital role prescribed education plays in the development of Ministers, I am of the spiritual persuasion that this is not the only means for people to embrace the ministry.

Our criteria for entrance into ministry are vital for the well-being of the present and future of The Body of Christ. However, Bible Colleges and Schools are NOT THE ALL IN ALL. As much as we must promote Bible Colleges and Schools, there is an alternative.

For this alternative to be accepted, it must have its roots in The Word of God. That which is not Word-based must always be unacceptable. By trade, I am a carpenter. I served a three-year Major Apprenticeship. I did all the practicals to qualify, but I also attended an Apprenticeship theoretical trade college. This enabled me to qualify as a registered carpenter. On close examination of God's Word, there are examples of men who served Major apprenticeships with seasoned men of God. Elisha and Joshua are classic examples of serving apprenticeships. Elisha served an apprenticeship with Elijah. Joshua served an apprenticeship with Moses. These two powerful men of God faithfully served their Spiritual Fathers. They had on-hand training, and no wonder they excelled in their respective ministries.

When Joshua served Moses for forty years, there were no Schools of Ministry. Instead, he received practical training from Moses. As a result, Moses publicly ordained Joshua as the Minister who led the Israelites into the Promise Land.

During Elisha's time, there was a School of Prophets. The remarkable truth of Elisha's call to Prophethood is seen in how he was set aside for ministry. His setting apart was not in the public eye. Furthermore, he was not a student at the School of The Prophets. He was a farmer. Joshua served a lengthy apprenticeship with Moses of forty years. Joshua, throughout those forty years, faithfully served Moses and was personally trained by Moses; The Journeyman trained the Apprentice:

NUMBERS 27: 18-23: SO, THE LORD SAID TO MOSES, "TAKE JOSHUA THE SPIRITUAL SON OF NUN, A MAN IN WHOM IS THE SPIRIT, AND LAY YOUR HAND ON HIM. ¹⁹ MAKE HIM STAND BEFORE ELEAZAR THE PRIEST AND ALL THE CONGREGATION, AND YOU SHALL COMMISSION HIM IN THEIR SIGHT. ²⁰ YOU SHALL INVEST HIM WITH SOME OF YOUR AUTHORITY THAT ALL THE CONGREGATION OF THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL MAY OBEY. ²¹ AND HE SHALL STAND BEFORE ELEAZAR THE PRIEST, WHO SHALL INQUIRE FOR HIM BY THE JUDGMENT OF THE URIM BEFORE THE LORD. AT HIS WORD THEY SHALL GO OUT, AND AT HIS WORD THEY SHALL COME IN, BOTH HE AND ALL THE PEOPLE OF ISRAEL WITH HIM, THE WHOLE CONGREGATION." ²² AND MOSES DID AS THE LORD COMMANDED HIM. HE TOOK JOSHUA AND MADE HIM STAND BEFORE ELEAZAR, THE PRIEST, AND THE WHOLE CONGREGATION, ²³ AND HE LAID HIS HANDS ON HIM AND COMMISSIONED HIM AS THE LORD DIRECTED THROUGH MOSES.

Joshua's commissioning was not based on academic achievement. It was based on Faithfulness of Servitude and AN IMPARTATION of a measure of Moses' Anointing. So likewise, Gamaliel tutored Apostle Paul (see Acts 22:3). In our day, not all have the privilege and financial means to attend Bible College or Seminaries. However, many of these people of God are faithful in their service to The Lord. Their Leaders (in spiritual

tune with The Holy Spirit) witness the call of God upon these faithful servants of The Lord. The Word of God is clear on this:

PROVERBS 18:16: A MAN'S GIFT MAKES ROOM FOR HIM AND BRINGS HIM BEFORE GREAT MEN.

Faithful Men and Women of God who, due to certain restraints, cannot attend Bible Colleges and Seminaries should be trained and released into their respective Fivefold Ministries by their Pastors and Elders. No doubt, The Word of God sets forth specific criteria which ensure and confirms the appointing and releasing of those into ministry who have not attended Bible Colleges and Seminaries.

Most Denominations do not agree with Ministerial Apprenticeships. They rigidly enforce academic achievement, and may I add to their detriment. Those unaccepted in the ministry leave the Church and begin a new Church. Over the years of my ministry, I have seen this repeatedly. These non-approved and unrecognized Ministers are labeled as — SELF APPOINTED PASTORS.

I must admit there was a time I concurred (agreed) with the Denominations. However, over the years, I viewed the outstanding growth of The Churches started by the so-called SELF-APPOINTED PASTORS. I REALIZED THAT MANY OF THESE MEN AND WOMEN WERE CALLED BY GOD. However, I encouraged these dear servants of The Lord to return to their previous Leadership and seek their blessing of RELEASEMENT. The Word of God teaches that the gift makes room for itself. However, Scripture teaches that though the gift makes room for itself, hands must be laid on the man of God as an act of releasement into the ministry (see Acts 13).

Over the years of my ministry, there have been a few so-called SELF-APPOINTED PASTORS I DID NOT RECOGNISE. I HAD ADEQUATE (SATISFACTORY) SPIRITUAL REASONS FOR MY ACTION. The Word of God is adamant (unyielding) that no servant of The Lord must build on another man's foundation:

ROMANS 15:20: AND THUS, I MAKE IT MY AMBITION TO PREACH THE GOSPEL, NOT WHERE CHRIST HAS ALREADY BEEN NAMED, LEST I BUILD ON SOMEONE ELSE'S FOUNDATION,

The rejected Self-Appointed Pastor influences members of the congregation to leave with him to start another Church. This is insurrection (rebellion). A new foundation must be laid, and that with new converts. This action reminds me of how Satan influenced a third of the heavenly host of angels to march with him to the throne of God to overthrow God and set himself as GOD:

ISAIAH 14:12-15: “HOW YOU ARE FALLEN FROM HEAVEN, O DAYSTAR, SON OF DAWN! HOW YOU ARE CUT DOWN TO THE GROUND, YOU WHO LAID THE NATIONS LOW! ¹³ YOU SAID IN YOUR HEART, ‘I WILL ASCEND TO HEAVEN; ABOVE THE STARS OF GOD I WILL SET MY THRONE ON HIGH; I WILL SIT ON THE MOUNT OF ASSEMBLY IN THE FAR REACHES OF THE NORTH; ¹⁴ I WILL ASCEND ABOVE THE HEIGHTS OF THE CLOUDS; I WILL MAKE MYSELF LIKE THE MOST HIGH.’ ¹⁵ BUT YOU ARE BROUGHT DOWN TO SHEOL, TO THE FAR REACHES OF THE PIT.

Another Scripture of admonishment is recorded in Romans 16:17:

I APPEAL TO YOU, BROTHERS, TO WATCH OUT FOR THOSE WHO CAUSE DIVISIONS AND CREATE OBSTACLES CONTRARY TO THE DOCTRINE YOU HAVE BEEN TAUGHT; AVOID THEM.

LAST WORD

The present-day Church (the entire Body of Christ) is responsible for securing a legacy of well-trained servants and handmaidens for the present and future generations to take The Gospel to the ends of the earth. Calvary Apostolic Ministries fervently pray that this book plays a vibrant part in securing such a legacy.

ADDENDUM

ABOUT THE AUTHOR	221
TENETS OF FAITH	223

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Dr. Joseph D'Allende was born at 15 Pine Road, Woodstock, Cape Town, to Joseph and Maud de Allende. He attended Holy Cross Primary and Saint Agnes Secondary Schools.

Joseph was Born-Again in 1975 and attended Open Door Assemblies Greenwood Park Durban. He served The Church as a Sunday School Teacher, Superintendent, and Deacon.

Joseph studied at International Bible College, obtaining a Diploma in Theology. And after that lectured at I.B.C for three years. After that, he pioneered A School of Ministry in Chatsworth and taught at a School of Ministry at Newlands East, which Pastor Ward had set up in his local Church.

Frequently, Joseph was blessed by The Lord, receiving invitations to minister in Tent campaigns. Many regarded Joseph as an Evangelist. However, because of Joseph's Teaching Ministry, he was approached by Life Centre Ministries to pioneer A Bible School in Sydenham. He wrote the Constitution and Prospectus by God's grace and established the Bible school. He was the principal for just over two years. Unfortunately, due to financial constraints, he had no alternative but to seek a pastor's post, as his work at Life Bible School was without remuneration.

Joseph pioneered three churches, which today have buildings (two built by his Spiritual Sons). One of the primary joys of his ministry was writing Church constitutions for Churches that transitioned from Democratic Principles of Governance to Theocratic Principles of Governance

In 2003 Joseph and his wife, Dolores, immigrated to New Zealand, and there he had the honor of serving The Tongan Assemblies of God for about four years. Joseph thanks Pastors Lenati, Sikalu, and Leo for sharing their pulpits with him. In addition, he set up a school of Ministry at Pastor Lenati's Assembly and helped Pastor Sikalu in his School of Ministry.

In 2011 with the help (paid help) of Ian Sinclair and a financial donation from his Spiritual Son, Pastor Jacob Isaac, he established Calvary Apostolic Ministries, which hosts almost 150 videos and a few books,

The illustrious man of God believes he owes all he has done to God, for he thinks it is not what he has done. Instead, it is what God the Holy Spirit has done through him. His dear wife, Dolores, has financially supported his ministry throughout the years, taking on the responsibility of being The Bread Winner of the family. Unfortunately, the strain has harmed her health. People stand aghast when Joseph tells them Dolores has had over forty operations. Doctors and Surgeons have often given up, but Dolores said that though the Doctors and Surgeons performed the operations, and the nurses did the bandaging, God performed the healing. Dolores encouraged Joseph never to ask for donations. Instead, she convinced her husband, whom she loves, that she would support his ministry financially. The loving and caring wife is seventy-seven years young and retired in February 2022. However, she is still working to support her husband's ministry.

Through Dolores' financial support, Joseph has ministered in Swaziland, Botswana, Mauritius (twice), Pakistan (twice), Singapore, Malaysia, Australia, and Tonga.

Joseph and Dolores have made things happen for God and with God. God has enriched them with Pioneering Spirits. With all that God has done with and through Dolores and Joseph. He brags that no one in The Body of Christ qualifies for the ministry like himself: "God delights to use the foolish things of the world to confound the wise," This man of God encourages all of God's people with one of his famous adages:

GOD WILL TAKE A NOBODY FROM NOWHERE AND MAKE THAT NOBODY A SOMEBODY,
AND AFTER GOD HAS MADE THAT NOBODY A SOMEBODY AND PLACED HIM
SOMEWHERE, GOD WILL SEND HIM EVERYWHERE.

CALVARY APOSTOLIC MINISTRIES

TENETS OF FAITH

PREAMBLE:

The Word of God warns The Church, “THERE ARE MANY VOICES IN THE WORLD (1 CORINTHIANS 14:10).” These voices often are not echoing THE VOICE OF GOD, and therefore Calvary Apostolic Ministries considers it highly essential that The Church appraises THE TENETS OF FAITH OF CALVARY

Undoubtedly, the lifestyle and character of the ministers of The Gospel of Jesus Christ are just as important as their doctrine. Like all men, Dr. D’Allende has also made mistakes and fallen short of God’s glory. Nevertheless, God’s goodness, mercy, and abundant grace have led him to repent and seek God’s favor over the years. Over the years, forgiveness and The Love of Almighty God have molded, refined, and shaped Dr. D’Allende to where he is in his God-ordained ministry.

TENET 1. THE AUTHENTICITY OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES The Old and New Testaments are THE AUTHENTIC, INSPIRED, AND INFALLIBLE WORD OF GOD and are profitable for:

DOCTRINE,

REPROOF,

CORRECTION AND

INSTRUCTION IN RIGHTEOUSNESS (1THESSALONIANS

2:13; 1 PETER 1: 21; two

TITUS 3:16).

TENET 2. THE TRINITY

There is only ONE TRUE GOD (Deuteronomy 6:4), the Creator of the universe (Isaiah 43:10) and humankind (Genesis 1:26-27), who has revealed Himself in The Holy Scriptures as God eternally existing in three persons: Father, Son of God, and Holy Spirit (Matthew 28:19; 2Corinthians 13:14; John 14:26; 15:26).

TENET 3. THE DEITY OF JESUS CHRIST

The Lord Jesus Christ is the Word made flesh (John 1:14), who was in the beginning with God (Genesis 1:1-4) and is God (John 1:1-4; Hebrews 1:8).

The Holy Scriptures emphatically teach the following concerning Jesus Christ:

HIS VIRGIN BIRTH (ISAIAH 7: 14; MATTHEW 1:23; LUKE 1:31, 35).

HIS SINLESS LIFE (HEBREWS 4:15; 1 PETER 2:22).

HIS MIRACLES (ACTS 2:22; 10:3).

HIS SUBSTITUTIONARY SACRIFICE (ISAIAH 53:1-12; 1CORINTHIANS 15:3).

HIS BODILY RESURRECTION (MATTHEW 28:6; LUKE 24:39; 1 CORINTHIANS 15:4).

HIS EXALTATION TO THE RIGHT OF GOD THE FATHER (ACTS 1:9-11; 2: 33).

HIS ABIDING MINISTRY OF INTERCESSION (HEBREWS 7:25) AND

HIS IMMINENT RETURN (JOHN 14:1-4; 1 THESSALONIANS 4:13-18).

Although people were initially created TENET 4. THE DEPRAVITY OF MANKIND

in the image and likeness of Almighty God (Genesis 1:26), like Adam and Eve, all human beings have willfully sinned and therefore come short of the glory of God (Romans 3:23), thus incurring upon themselves the penalty of labor, disease, physical and spiritual death (Genesis 3:1-24; Romans 3:10; 23; 6:23).

TENET 5. SOTERIOLOGY

Salvation is only through the acceptance of Jesus Christ as one's Personal Saviour (John 1:12; 14:6; Acts 4:12). It is never experienced through self-righteous deeds (Is 64:6). Salvation is experienced by exercising faith in the gracious act of Christ's substitutionary death on the Cross of Calvary and His bodily Resurrection over death and the grave (Matthew 28:6; Luke 24:39; 1Corinthians 15:1-8; Ephesians 2:8-9). Other than exercising faith, all must:

REPENT OF THEIR SINS (ACTS 2:38),

BELIEVE AND CONFESS THE LORD JESUS CHRIST (ROMANS 10:8-10) AND WALK IN THE

NEWNESS OF LIFE (HEBREWS 12:14).

TENET 6. HELL - THE SECOND DEATH

Though Hell was initially prepared for the devil and the fallen angels (Matthew 25:41), the Word of God emphatically declares that the fearful, the unbelieving, the abominable, murderers, whore mongers, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone, which is the Second Death (Revelation 21:8; 2:11; 20:6).

TENET 7. THE ORDINANCES

The two Ordinances practiced in The Church are Water Baptism and The Lord's Supper. Both these Ordinances are not Sacraments. They do not have soteriological benefits as found in the substitutionary death of Jesus Christ on the Cross of Calvary and the Resurrection of Jesus Christ over death and the grave. They are but analogies and visual aids to constantly remind The Church of the accomplished atonement of our Lord Jesus Christ for the remission of sins of depraved humanity.

WATER BAPTISM: ALL BORN-AGAIN BELIEVERS (JOHN 3:1-6) ARE INSTRUCTED IN THE HOLY SCRIPTURES TO IDENTIFY WITH JESUS CHRIST THROUGH THE PUBLIC ACT OF WATER BAPTISM (MATTHEW 28:19; ACTS 2:38; ROMANS 6:1-4). THE MODE IS IMMERSION (MATTHEW 3:16; ACTS 8:36-39) AND IN THE NAME OF THE FATHER AND OF THE SON AND THE HOLY SPIRIT (MATTHEW 28:19-20).

THE LORD'S SUPPER: ALL BORN-AGAIN BELIEVERS (JOHN 3:1-6) ARE INSTRUCTED IN THE HOLY SCRIPTURES TO PARTAKE OF THE LORD'S TABLE (HOLY COMMUNION, THE LORD'S TABLE) AS A SIGN OF THEIR FAITH IN THE EFFICACIOUS ATONEMENT FOR SIN AND THE SOON RETURN OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST FOR HIS CHURCH (1CORINTHANS 11:23-34).

TENET 8: THE BAPTISM INTO THE HOLY SPIRIT

The Baptism into The Holy Spirit is confirmed with the evidence of speaking in other tongues. One of the purposes of the experience of the Baptism is the anointing to witness Jesus as the Messiah to all humanity (Joel 2:28-32; Matthew 3:11; Acts 1:8; 2:1-4; 17-21; 8:14-17; 10:44-48; 19:1-6).

TENET 9. THE SPIRITUAL GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT

The Spiritual Gifts of the Holy Spirit are Almighty God's endowment to the Spirit-filled Born-Again Believer to express God's omnipotence and omniscience at given times for the common good of The Church (profit withal 1 Corinthians 12:7) and Edification, Exhortation and Comfort (1 Corinthians 14:3:12, 26, 31).

TENET 10. THE CHURCH

The Church includes all Born Again Believers called out from the world by The Spirit of God (John 16:8) to constitute The One True Church upon the earth with the expressed purpose of setting up The Kingdom of God. The Church in The Holy Scriptures is also termed:

THE BODY OF CHRIST (1 CORINTHIANS 10:17:12:12-13), THE TEMPLE OF GOD (1 CORINTHIANS 3:16), AND THE HABITATION OF GOD (EPHESIANS 2:22).

TENET 11. THE GOVERNMENT OF THE CHURCH

The Lord Jesus Christ is the Head of The Church (Isaiah 9:6: Matthew 16:18; Ephesians 1:22; 2:20) and governs His Church through the ministry of the Holy Spirit and The Word of God (The Sword of the Spirit John 16:12-15; Ephesians 6:17), who in turn reveals the will and purposes of Jesus Christ to the God-appointed leadership of the Denominational and Local Autonomous Congregations. The Leadership is THE FIVEFOLD MINISTRIES OF APOSTLES, PROPHETS, EVANGELISTS, PASTORS, AND TEACHERS (Ephesians 4:8-16).

TENET 12. THE PRINCIPLE OF AUTONOMY

ALTHOUGH LOCAL CHURCHES WITHIN CHURCH DENOMINATIONS AND LOCAL INDEPENDENT CHURCHES ARE PART OF THE WORLDWIDE BODY OF CHRIST, EACH LOCAL CHURCH HOLDS TO ITS PREROGATIVE OF BEING AN AUTONOMOUS INDIGENOUS ORGAN OF THE BODY OF CHRIST. Therefore, THE PRINCIPLES OF SELF-GOVERNANCE, SELF-SUPPORT AND SELF-PROPAGATION ARE INHERENT IN EACH LOCAL CHURCH. YET, EVERY LOCAL CHURCH RECOGNIZES THE PRINCIPLE OF AUTHORITY. THEREFORE, LOCAL DENOMINATIONAL AND INDEPENDENT CHURCHES ACCEPT THE PRINCIPLE OF RELATIONSHIP TO SPIRITUAL FATHERS, COUNSELLORS, AND ASCENDED GIFTED MINISTERS, WHO, IN A SPIRIT OF LOVE AND CARE, MINISTER TO

THE LOCAL CHURCHES, BEARING IN MIND THAT THEY NEVER PRESCRIBE NOR DICTATE TO THE LOCAL CHURCHES (ACTS 20:28).

TENET 13. THE SPIRITUAL LAW OF ASSOCIATION

The Church is The Body of Christ, composed of all Born Again Believers. Within the Body of Christ, there are diversities of interpretations and doctrines. Therefore, each Local Church reserves its prerogative to choose with whom it shall foster a relationship to safeguard its persuasion of interpretation and doctrine (Acts 20:28).

TENET 14. THE FIVEFOLD ASCENDED GIFTS OF CHRIST

Jesus Christ, the head of the church, has blessed his church with the fivefold governmental ascended gifts for the well-being and extension of the kingdom of god (Ephesians 4:8-11; 1corinthians 12:28). These essential gifts are operative till the coming of the lord for his church (Thessalonians 4:18), with one significant distinction and that being these gifted ministries are not foundational as the early church ascended gifts (Ephesians 2:20). They do not receive divine revelation: INSTEAD, THEY RECEIVE ILLUMINATION ON THE REVEALED WORD OF GOD IS ENTRENCHED IN THE HOLY SCRIPTURES. Though there is this significant distinction, their purpose of ministry is the same as The Foundational Gifted Ministries (Ephesians 4:13-15).

TENET 15. TITHING AND FREE WILL OFFERINGS

For The Church to fulfill its God-given mandate (Matthew 28:19-20), it is compulsory that all Born Again Believers support their Local Churches with the Tithes and Free Will Offerings (Genesis 14:20; 28:22; 2 Chronicles 31:1-21; Nehemiah 13:10-14; Matthew 23:23; 1Corinthians 9:7-9; 16:2; 1Titus 5: 17-18; Hebrews 7:1-11).

TENET 16. ESCHATOLOGY

THE RAPTURE OF THE CHURCH:

The Rapture is The Blessed Hope (Titus 2:13) of all those Born-Again Believers (John 3:1-6) who have died in The Lord and living Born Again Believers, who are caught up in the air to meet The Lord. The Rapture is the imminent event that causes The Church to escape the horror of the Tribulation period (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18; Daniel 9:27).

THE TRIBULATION PERIOD: This is the seven-year period divided into two equal parts termed in The Holy Scripture as The Lesser and Greater Tribulation (Revelation 11:2-3). During this period, God deals with the unsaved world and Israel. These two periods are also referred to as Jacob's Trouble and Seventieth Week (Jeremiah 30:7; Daniel 9:27; Revelation 20:1- 6).

THE SECOND ADVENT OF CHRIST AND THE MILLENNIAL REIGN OF CHRIST:

The Second Advent is the visible return of Jesus Christ with His saints. Christ, together with His saints, will rule from Jerusalem for ONE THOUSAND YEARS while Satan and his Fallen Angels, the False Prophet, and the Anti-Christ, are bound in The Bottomless pit (Zechariah 14:5; Acts 1:1-5; Revelation 20:1- 6).

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT:

After the Millennial Reign of Christ and His saints, all the wicked dead will be resurrected to appear before God's Throne, judged according to their works, and cast into the lake of fire (Re 20:11-15). Scripture also refers to this event as THE SECOND DEATH (Revelation 20:14b).

THE NEW JERUSALEM: A new Heaven and a New Earth will come down from Heaven, and God will forever dwell with His people (Re 21:1-7).

TENET 17. THE KINGDOM OF ISRAEL

The Church of Jesus Christ (Matthew 16:18) does not replace Israel. Throughout the Old Testament, Israel is referred to as a Kingdom (1 Samuel 15:28; 24:20; 1 Kings 21:7), while The Church is termed A Body, Temple, Habitation, Royal Priesthood, Holy Nation, and a Peculiar People (1Corinthians 3:16; 10:17; 12:12; 1 Peter 2:9). Furthermore, The Covenant that God made with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob is an EVERLASTING COVENANT (Genesis 17:7, 8, 19).

Please feel free to use our website: calvary apostolic ministries. In addition, there are about 150 videos, a few books, and several essays.

You may make copies, however, do not change our logo or alter our videos and books.

Please pray for us.

dallendenz@gmail.com

HOME ADDRESS
6 Oystergrove Road
West Harbour
0618
Auckland
New Zealand

A BIG GOD BLESS YOU, YOUR FAMILY, AND THE CONGREGATION